THE

HISTORY

OF

MADAMOISELLE

DE

St, Phale,

Giving a Full Account of
The Miraculous Conversion
Of a NOBLE

French Lady

And her Daughter,

Reformed Religion.

WITH.

The Defeat of the Intriegues of a JESUITE their Confessor.

Eranflated out of french.

LONDON.

Printed by J. A. for J. Hancock, and are to be Sold by most Booksellers in London and Westminster, 1691.



TO

M A D A M Gerthrude Rodd,

OF

WARE near EXON.

MADAM,

were pleased to express on the perusal of some Sheets of this History, hath emboliened me to present you with the whole. Nor could I put it into better hands than yours, who A. 2.

The Epistle

so exactly Harmonize with its i

tustrious subject, in the best part in

of her Character. And if a Could former in Dif ofitions, be the Grown I and Cement of Affection, I know I note with whom the may find Ip jurer protection or a better Welcom co then with you. I co fel, Madam w the Drefs in which the following H. fi Story is cloatted, and some Passage the in it, have somewhat of the Air of hi a Romance, and I may possible E be censured for busying my self i R Translating, as its Author was for as Composing a Piece of fuch a Nat ture; but as this was my Imploy rit ment or rather Diversion, during

an undesirable Leisure from mon fice serious Work, so, had I not been or well assured of the truth of the Amost material and substantial passure me

ges

00

Dedicatory.

ges in it, I should never have been induced to have taken pains about it, much less have presion'd to pre= Jent you with it. It's Author is a Person that bath gotten some re-I putation by his Writings, which I can hardly persuade my self he would willingly Hazard, by Impo-Ing Fictions on the World: And that Sincerity be hath discovered in o his other Works (by which he hath Exposed himself, not only to the Rage of a Party, as malicious as powerfull, but to the displeasure of his Friends, by that just sererity and Freedom he useth in re= proving their Miscarriages,) may suf= ficiently secure us, against the Apprehensions of Falshood in this. The Author indeed confesseth le hath anade use of Feigned Names, which

The Epiffle

which he was obliged to doe, be- w cause some of the Persons concern'd the had resolved a Journey into Erance wh incognito, to recover if possible bu Somewhat of their Estates, which the had been ravisht from them by co the unparallel'd Tyranny of their th King, and his bloody Counsellors co the Tefaits, and of which they had I chosen to make shipwrack, rather on than of a good Conscience.

Having given this account of the its Piece it felf, I beg the Liberty to sle Give you, and by you, others, an of account of the Motive that Induced me to make it publick in our own Language: Besides the earnest Re= Exe quests of some Friends at whose defire I first translated it, the Consideration of the good Effect it had whilest

tl: ev

Dedicatory.

whilest in Manuscript, in opening the Hearts and Purses of many to the bounteous Relief of those poor but Generous Confessors of Christ, the French Refugies (whereof I could produce several Witnesses in this (ity,) bath been my chief Encouragement. If it hath the same Effect from the Press, I shall judge my self abundantly recompensed for the pains I have taken in it: How= ever this Advantage I shall have by Its publication, an opportunity to delare my ardent Vows for the Bleffing of God on your felf and Family, and to Jure you that I am,

Exon. Sept.

MADAM,

Your most Humble Servant,

B. S.

Land are to be fold by John Haner the Royal Exchange.

la resence of the Gospel at Margarets New-

Figh-frame man is

1. Precious Remedies against Satans Devices, or Salve for Bellevers and Unbelievers Sores: being a Companies for those that are in Christ, or out of Chrift.

2. Heaven on Earth: Or a serious Discourse touching a Well grounded Affurance of Mans Everlasting Happiness.

3. The Unfearchable Riches of Christ, held forth

(

1

1

n

Z

tl

ne

fo

ef

pe

bo

Na

on

Ch

Bell

whi

in 22 Sermons.

4. Apples of Gold for Young Men and Women, or the happiness of being good betimes.

5. A String of Pearls : or the best things refer-

ved rill laft.

6 The Mute Christian under the smarting Rod, with Soveraign Antidotes against the most miseratle Exigences.

7. The Privy Key of Heaven: or a Discourse

of Cloter Prayer.

8. A Cabinet of choice Jewels, or a Box of precious Oyntment: containing special Maxims, Rules and Directions, in order to the clearing up of a Man's Interest in Christ, and his Title to all the Glory of another World.

The Godly Mans Ark, in several Sermons. To which is added Mrs. Mons Evidences for Heaven : By

Ed nund Calamy, B. De at Aldermanbury.

Christ's Communion with his Church Militant: by Micholas Locky v.

Sin the Plague of Plagues: by Ralp' Wenirg. A true Narrative of those two never to be for-Batton

gotten Deliverances. One from the Spanish Invasion 88, the other from the Hellish Powder Plot: Nov. 5. 1605: by Mr. Sam. clark. To which is newly added a brief Account of the late Horrid Plot. discovered 1678, with a Relation of other Popish Cruckies, here and beyond Sea.

Short-Writing, the most Easie, Exact, Lineal and Speedy method that hath ever yet been obtained, as Thousands in the City and elsewhere, can from their own Experience tellifie: by Thousands Metcalf.

Also a Book called a School-mafter to it, explain-

ing all the Rules thereof.

A Word of Advice to Sints; or a choice Drop

of Honey from the Rock Christ.

A Copy-book of the Newest and most useful Hands,

with Directions for Spelling and Cyphering.

Vennings Remains, being the Sustance of many Sermons: by Mr. Raiph Venning, prepared by him-felt for the Prets a little perfore his Death.

noffick of mal guant Influences from the many Bla-

zing Stars wandring in our Horizon

Gospel-love, Heart-purity, and the flourishing of the Righteous: being the last Sermons, of that Eminent Divine Mr. Foleph Caryl.

The Young mans Guide to Bleffedness, or leafonable Directions for Youth, in their unconverted effare: by R. Maybiw, Minister of the Gospel.

Causa Da, or an Apology for God: wherein the perperuity of Infernal Torments is evidenced, and both his Goodness and Justice desended! Also the Nature of Punishments in general, and of Infernal ones in particular displayed: by R. Burthogge.

The Legacy of a dying Mother to her mourning Children, being the Experiences of Mrs. Sufanna

Bell: published by The Brooks.

King James his Counterblast to Tobacco: To which is added a learned Discourse touching Tobac-

co, by Dr. Maynwaring: wherein men may see whe

ther Tobacco be good for them or no.

Strength in Weakness: being a Sermon preached at the Funeral of Mrs. Martha Brooks, late Wife to Mr. Tho. Brooks, Minister of the Gospel : to which is added some Experiences of the Grace and dealing of God, observed and gathered by a near Relation of the faid Mrs. Brooks.

A discourse of Christs coming, and the Influence which the expectation thereof hath on all manner of Holy Conversation and Godliness. By Theophi-

in Gale.

The Shepherds Legacy, or forry Years Experience of the Weather.

The Young Mans Conflict with, and Victory over the Devil by Faith: Or a true and perfect Relation of the Experiences of Tho. Powel, begun in the Fifteenth, and continued till the Seventeenth Year of

Christs ce tain and sudden Appearance to Judg.

By Sam. Malbon.

A brief Description of N w Tork, and the places therero adjoyning, with Directions and Advice to fuch as shall go thicker, by D. Denton.

A Cry for Labourers in Gods Harvest, being a Sermon preached at the Foneral of Mr. Ralph Ven-

ming, by R. Bragge, Minister of the Gospel.

Christian Directions, shewing how to walk with

God all the day long, by Tho. Gouge.

Conscience the best Friend apon Earth, or the happy effects of keeping a good Conscience: By Henry Stubbes.

Mr. Stubb's Directions for making peace with Ric

God, and his true last Speeches.

Orthodox Paradoxes, Theoretical and Experimen n tal, or a Believer clearing Truth by feeming Contradictions With an Appendix of the Triumph of Affurance over the Law, Sin, World, Wants, &

Un are in

To

cd.

rig

a T Me aw.

fev

Eff the Scr Eff

Di b P B

Gla cor

dic CX

Nia

Wi by

rid

To which is added, The New Command Renewed, or Love one another. With Ten Rules for the right understanding of Scripture: by R. Venning, A. M.

An Awakening Call from the Eternal God to the Unconverted, with scassonable Advice to them that are under Convictions, to prevent their miscarrying in Conversion, by Sam. Corbin, A. M.

The Triumph of Mercy in the Chariot of Praise: a Treatise of preventing, secret and unexpected Mercies, with some mixt Reflections, by S. Lee.

The best Priend standing at the Door, or Christ's awakening and affectionate Call, both to Professors and secure Sinners, for Entrance into the House, in

several Sermons, by John Ryther.

Israel Redux: Or, the Restauration of Irael; an Essay upon probable Grounds, that the Tartars are the Ten Tribes of Israel, by G. F. With some Scripture Evidences of their suture Conversion and Establishment in their own Land; together with two Discourses on the mournful state of the Church, with a Prospect of her dawning Glory, by S. Lee.

Beams of the Spirit, Enlivening, Enlightning, and

Gladding the Soul. Imp. 7of. Caryl.

The absolute Accomptant, or London-Merchant, containing Instructions and Directions for a Methodical keeping of Merchants Accounts, after the most exact and concise way of Debtor and Creditor. By Tho. Brown, Accomptant.

The true and only way of Concord of all the Chriflian Churches, the Defireableness of it, and the Detection of false dividing Terms opened: By

Richard Baxter.

A true Believers Choice and Pleasure, instanced in the Exemplary Life of Mrs. Mary Cox, the late Wife of Dr. Tho. Cox: Preached for her Funeral by Richard Baxter.

A Narrative, and Impartial Discovery of the Horrid Popith Plot; carried on for the burning and destroy-

ftroying the Cities of London and Westminster, with their Suburbs, & Setting forth the several Confules, Orders, and Resolutions of the Jesuites concerning the same. And divers Depositions and Informations relating thereunto, never before printed. By Capt. William Bed de, lately engaged in that Horrid Design, and one of the Popish Committee for carrying on such Fires.

A Narrative of unheard-of Popish Cruckies towards Protestants beyond Seas or, a new Account of the Bloody Spanish Inquisition. Published as a Ca-

veat to Protestants. By M. Dugdale.

The Plot in a Dream, or the Discoverer in masquerade, fully and truly relating the History of the present Popish Plot, from it's Original to this time, with feveral Pictures to illustrate the Design

The Second part of the Non-conformilis Plea for Peace, being an Account of their Principles about Civil and Ecclerafical Authority and Ohedience:

in 4th. B. R. Barter.

A Treatife of the Souls Union with Christ, wherein is declared, what this Union with Jesus Christ is, and many falle grounds of Union discovered, in 800. by I. I.

God call to England for thankfulness after Gracious deliverances, wherein is shewed, that our deliverances, not Answered with Reformation, will be sollowed with sorest destruction, in 12. by Tho. Gouge.

A Sermon preached Oct. 10. at the Funeral of Mr The Breeks, who departed this Life, Sept. 27. 1680.

By Jobn Reeve.

THE

cei e i



THE

HISTORY

OF

Madamoiselle de St. Phale.

CHAP. I.

Gentlemen and Ladyes,

Oll may possibly promise your selves a great deal of Pleasure in the Account of my Life, but lest I should frustrate your Expectations, must assure you, you's find but little that's diverting, it, it being almost wholly made up of such accients as are sad and tragical: This I thought fit to inform you of, that you might not reproach me after-

ards with having deceived you.

I was born in the Dutchy of Burgundy, of a Family at had Professed the resormed Religion for above 1 50 cars, whose Nobility was sufficiently ancient. My Facers Name was Monsieur d' Ombreval, who had been amp-Master, and enjoyed many Offices, and might, may be, have been advanced to the highest, had he cen, as many others, less scrupulous about Religion. It was generally accounted as eminent in Prudence, Vision and Picty, as most in France: He had performed

formed such things as made him considerable; - yet none excelled him in mildness and sweetness of Carriage in his Family. My Father had never but one Sifter, for whom he had always an extraordinary love, and this Sifter is styled Madam de Proffes, who is here with me; and though my Mother were full living, yet I am more o'sliged to my Aunt than to

my Mother, as you will hereafter fee.

Love, which tomerimes delights to flew its force on the wifest spirits, made my Father himself do what he would certainly have diffiked in another. For he fell in love with my Mother, who was in her Bro time one of the handfomest and compleatest Ladies Man in all the Province, and was besides of a very Noble or, and Rich Family; but that would have made no Impretion at all on him, had his Mind been free. At first he only loved out of Gallantry, that he might not go differ from all other young men, who have always, co fome Inclination; but at length his Love got such a ne vidory over him, and made him so Extract in his tuit, con that he engaged my mothers affections towards him, who heard him univerfally commended, and their tle Marriage was discoursed of.

Love hath indeed in it fomewhat very wonderful, in finds Expedients for all things, and easily fur mounts the greatest difficulties. My Father was always, even on to his Death, so resolute an Huguenot, as that the Flantes were not capable of altering him. My Mother was a most obstirate Catholick: Both were for far from embracing each others Religion, as that they would fain have had each other take up their own. But at length some Mediators (whereof Love was the chief) made up an Agreement between them of these three Conditions, via. That they should be married first by a Priest, and afterwards by a Mi-That they thould never discourse of Religion. And, That of the Children they should have Re the Sons should be educated in the Religion of their Father, and the Daughters in that of their Mother.

A

bo

R

n

n

onl

Th

ak

00

ha

ic

er

the

ed

his

I

len

fe d

n

rd,

rt

ofice

All these Articles were very punctually observed on both sides, especially that of silence in matters of Religion, out of prudence to prevent Contentions and Heats, each knowing the other to be resolved

n that Point.

The first Year of this Marriage gave Birth to the only Brother which I have, and the fourth to me; There were other Children, but God was pleased to ake them all away in their Infancy. My Father ook a great deal of Care in the Education of my-Brother, especially to get him well Principled in latters of Religion, and to this end got him a Tuor, who instilled the Principles of Religion into him he learnt to read and write. My Mother was as reful of me, to get me educated in the Romith Region, and provided a Governess for me that was an complished Hypocrite. My Brother from his Inncy discover'd a great aversion and abhorrence of e Romish Religion, and although he most tenderloved me, could not lone times to be loser, where the Idolater: Once he got into my Closer, where the Idolater Pictures of Saints of both Sexes, on loved me, could not sometimes forbear calling me had divers Pictures of Saints of both Sexes, on hich he made Beards, Affes-Ears, and Horns; fomeowing them from one end of the Chamber to the her, and making such sport with them, as had the ther Mainbourge scen ir, he would certainly have de out, See how the Spirit of Heresie shows it self ed our, See how the Spirit of Herefie fhems it felf his Collabood: I might quarrel with him as long I would, but were fure to get nothing by it, 'till length he was furprized by my Mother in the diffe of a Jesuite, who so dealt with him as that he is not come thither for three days after. In a rd, one would have thought that how young so the was, he had a design to render the Cathor Religion contemptible to me.

These first Follies of his Childhood being over, he

These first Follies of his Childhood being over, he ofited so well by the Instructions he had received, that twelve Years of Age he could read, write,

speak the Latine and the German Tongues indifferent well, fo that my Father being fully fatisfied with his lo clinations, and his Tutors love, refolved to fend then both to Saumar, with a Servant to wait on them, when I shall leave him to speak of what concerned my fel My Mother educated me exactly according to the Pre feriptions of her Confessor; I shall not relate all the was daily done and taid to me, nor all the Arge ments nor frories that they made use of to prejudic me against calvinin. My Mother often entertaine thoughts of placing me in a Convent, Paving for m Table; but knowing that I could learn nothing the fuitable to my Quality, the laid that Defignafide.

re

7 0

01

15

en

ns,

hv

c v

f C

1

ep

nat

or a

eli

ur l

ome

ack

fter

he j

nein.

equi

rpr

ewe

lood

min

On

is Ca

ngu!

bund

I shall not spend more time in giving an accou of what befell me 'till I came to the Age of seventee when I attained the Stature I now have, and were very pailable Catholick. Tis true, I began to ha many Doubts, which I durst not reveal to any, bo about the Eucharift, the Merit of Works, Purgato and Auricular Confession, and though I did all th I could, I found it impossible to submit either to the Authority of the Church or of the Curate; and i Mother knowing me to be somewhat curious, a fearing least my Curiofity should lead me to know more than was convenient for those of the Rom Religion, thought it necessary to find some Imple ment for my spirir, she therefore caused me to le to Dance, Sing, Play on the Claricords or Harpfie and to draw; made me read Romances, Comedi and Poetry, and fuffer'd me to wait on her in all Visits she made to such as were most eminent quality near our House. After this my Mother g me leave to take a Journey to Paris, my Father of fenting to it, to fee all the Curiofities that the Co afforded. I returned with my Aunt and Coufins ab the beginning of Winter, and my Mother feeing 0115 have a more free and genteel Carriage than before ardly loved me the more, and made me her Confident! erico matter infficiently pleafant.

My Brother having been fix Years at Saumar, where e had made a good Progress in the Languages and hilosophy, my Father resolved to send him to anoher Place, where he might learn to ride the great orie, and be exercised in seats of Arms, and also et an infight into the Mathematicks: My Brother ecame accomplished in these things in fix Months. fter which he defired leave of my Father to go ino the Army; who knowing that should he deny it. e was of fufficient Years to take it himfelf, granted is defire; and having given him Money for his Exences, fent him away with one of our near Relatins, who gave him many good Instructions, which by Brother fo exactly followed, that in a thort time e was accounted by the whole Army to be a Man Courage, Vertue, Honour and Merit.

My Pather had constant News brought him of the eputation my Brother had gotten, and of the offers hat were made him of an Office, very honourable or a young Man, on condition he would change his eligion, which my Brother generously resused; but ur Relation doubting least he might be at last overome by the Violence of the Temptation, fent him ack to his Father. Thus my Brother returned home fter ten Years absence, and you may eafily guess at he joy and fatisfaction we had to fee him, adorned nth the many excellent and genteel Qualities he had equired. My Brother also discovered an obliging rprize to find me what I were, and we foon reewed that affection to which the nearness of our lood obliged us, which was much increased by a natual effects we had for each other.

On the other hand my Brother was very exact in is Carriage towards my Mother, which was full of agular respect and tenderness. Twas here that I bund that the Love of Mothers is more towards their ons than their Daughters, for my Mother could ardly endure my Brother out of her fight, but contested with him with the greatest familiarity and

Religion, for fear of violating the agreement made with my Father, and of encouraging him by her example, to do the fame thing to me; yet this extorted fome fighs from her, as I observed when I was with her about 15 days after my Brothers return.

who at that time humbly withdrew.

The Familiarity of my Mother with me, emboldened me to demand the Cause of her Affliction: I am, faid she, one of the happiest Women in France, I only want one thing, which yer is not impossible, but I dare not hope it. Madam, replyed I, this is so mysterious a Riddle, that I can't com-I believe fo, faid the, but I il tell you prehend it. its meaning: You know how tenderly I love your Father and Brother, and indeed their excellent Qualities command the Affections both of a Wife and of a Mother; but when I think that they are both Hercticks, and have no Part in the Catholick Church, out of which there's no Salvation, and that if they die in the Estate in which they are, they are Eternally damn'd, it breaks my very Heart, and my Compassion is augmented by the Consideration of their Merit and Virtue, fo that I could wish them less good than they are, that I might be dispensed with from loving them as I do, for then the Affli-Sion would be less sensible and grievous to me: As for your Father, the Assurance that I have of his Obstinacy in his Error, doth in a great measure silence my Complaints, but is there no way left to draw your Brother, who is yet young and tender, out of this Gulph in which he is? And a little after, fixing her Eves earneftly upon me, Will not you, faid the, affift me in this matter, and speak to your Brother? for neither your Father nor I dare violate the folemn Oaths that we have made, though niv Confessor hath often Promised me a Dispensation. But Mother, said I, my Brother is Learned, and thould I discourse with him about this, we must come

to

to

pl

PL

W

10

fhe

bu

ur

1111

an

ipe

ed

the

Pr

wi

far

Br

Mo

pa

thi

cr

my

tha

M

W

ed

do

tha

ade

La

La

ni

de

Sif

fell

ber

tur

Pra

to a Dispute, in which he would soon put me to a nonplus. Enter not my Daughter, said she, into Dispute with him, but only Propose to him some Worldly Advantages, and you'll see what he'll say

to you.

Though my Mother was a Woman of spirit, yet the did not penetrate into the Consequences of this bufiness, which were yet visible enough, for by my urging my Brother to change his Religion, I gave him opportunity to make me the same Proposals, and he had this advantage over me, in that he could speak what he knew, (for he had diligently studyed both Religions) which I could not do, because they had taken more Pains to fill my mind with Prejudices against the Huganots, than to fortifie me with folid and powerful Reasons against them. The fame day we had a fingular Conversation, for my Brother who converted familiarly only with my Mother and my self, spent whole days in our Company, and if I were in my Chamber, would come thirher to feek me, where we either plaid at Chefs, or discoursed on variety of Subjects; for, as for my Father, his Gravity and Seriousness was such, that we durft not familiarly Converse with him. My Brother found me reading over my Horary; What are you doing Sifter? faid he, I am, (answered I,) Praying God for your Conversion: That's well done indeed, (replyed he) there's a good Sifter that takes Care of her Brother's Salvarion; but, added he, with a kind of mocking smile, In what Language is it, good now, that you Pray? Is it in Latine or in French? and taking my Book out of my Hand, he found that all my Prayers were indeed in Latine; whereupon he said, I doubt not Sifter but you speak Litine, fince you read it; and fell a speaking of what seemed to me persect Gibberish: Despite and Shame hindered me from returning any Answer, for I mull Confess, that this Praying in an unknown Tongue, was the first abuse

shufe I took notice of in the Roman Communion, and could never get my felf heartily to approve of it.

I would (field I) pray Cod for your Conversion, but I know that 'twould be an offence to the Divine Majetty to pray for a Scoffer, for which reafon I forbear it as a great fin. My Brother faw well enough that I was displeased with him, yet this did not hinder him from proceeding in his jocofe manner. My dear Sifter, faid he, I am obliged to you for your Care of my Salvation, yet heware leaft while you imagine you are endeavouring the Salvarion of my Soul, you do not ruine it; Int I hope God will not hear fuch Requests, as should they be granted, would prove fatal to me. But Silier, continued he, that I may not for my part they my felf defective in Charity, I carneftly beg God that he would touch your Heart, that you may no longer perfift in the Superstitions in which you have been bred. He spake these last words with to much feriousness, that I had no Power to reply, nor did he give me time to do it.

I molt, added he, speak freely to you, as to a Sister whom I dearly love: What do you mean in Praying to God in Latine? think you that he is beeter pleased with this Language than with your own Mother Tongue? Why was it that our Saviour caused his slo! Spirit to descend on his Apostles in the form of Tongues of Fire, but to shew us that his Name might be invoked, and his Praise sung in all Languages? What then makes your doring Docton prescribe us a Model of Prayers, and a form of Worship all in Latine? certainly the Jews have better reason than the Catholicks, for they say their Prayers in Hebrew, which is the Holy Tongue which God himself used; but as for the Latine; we have no reason in the World to believe it better pleasing

to God than any other Language.

I fee Brother, faid I, that I am far from Converting you, and yet (added I, smiling) this Task

h

t!

11

C

B

13

11

th

th

11

m

C

m

CO

on

to

in

to

w

CO

C

rei

12:

il.

be

in.

wh

Whi

ma

for.

alt:

200

hur

urge

do i

is imposed upon me: And who imposed it, (faid het) She that gave you Life, (faid I) and would fain give you Eternal Life if it were possible. Tis then my Mother, (replyed he) who distaining to imploy her own Learning against me, thinks it enough to fend her Daughter to convince me: But Sitter, added he, laughing out aloud, take Courage, execute the Commission that hath been given you; quote me the Explication of the Fathers on the Scripture, the Decrees of General Councils, the History of all Ages; bring Aristotle and Decrees into the Field, and if you will, all the Schoolmen; show me by convincing Arguments that your Church is the true Church, and I shall account it

my Honour to obey you.

At these words my Passion grew so violent, that I could not mafter it, and flriking him a smart blow on the fingers with my busk, He teach you, faid I, to jear me. Well done Sifter, faid he, burfting out inco a Laughter, I fee well that you have learned to impate the Persecutors of our Churches, who when heir artifice and cunning fails them, have recourse to force. This gentle reproach filled me with Contution, which might early be read in my Countenance. This is nothing, faid he, I pardon you-with all my heart, but you must tell me plainly all that my Mother said to you. My Mother (replyed I) believes that you may one day become a good Ca-holick, provided a little care be taken of you: And what, faid he, could induce her to think to? That which you have faid your felf, answered I, that too-man of the Egremonies were laid afide in the Re-formed Church, and this makes her believe that you are much disgusted with the Religion of Calvin. Alas-good Woman! (cryed he) how fast her imagination harnes her! how early doth the believe what the denres! But (added he) did she command you to-urge me in this Point, and did you promise her todo it? I promised that I would speik to you about 114

it, and that I would not amuse my self to dispute with you. You intend then Sister, said he, to make me yield without an Engagement, which I'll never do either in temporals or spirituals. You may dispute against me if you please; I'll not dispute at all, (said I) I had rather leave you in your Error. Ah (said he) if you will not dispute with me, I'll dispute with you, and therefore now prepare to de-

tend your felf.

Immediately, without giving me time to answer, he took up a little Crucifix that was on the Table, what do you intend to do with this? Of what use is it? It brings my Saviour (replyed I) to my mind; is it possible, (answered he) that you need such helps as these to inind you of your Saviour? Can't you think on him without having a Crucifix before your Eyes? indeed your Devotion must needs be at a low ebb, if you can't mind God unless you have this before you: But you know (faid I) that our mind is apt to be diffracted, and to run out after variety of things, and that we must often reduce it to its proper Object by the fight of fuch things as fix its thoughts. I shall turn (said he) your own Argument upon your felf. 'Tis the Crucifix that you look on, that distracts you in your contemplation of Jefus Christ: For Sister (added he) when you behold the Crucifix, you cannot chuse but say in your sfelf, there's the Image of Jesus Christ, and when you think on the Image, you think not directly on Jesus Christ. And, as you know, it is impossible at once to look upon a man and his Picture; fo 'tis impossible to have an Image before your Eyes, and yet to think only on the Original. If you cannot think on Jesus Christ unless you have a Crucifix before you, 'tis a plain Evidence that your Piety is very miserable, fince it owes its support and maintenance to such wretched means. 'Tis as much as if you had faid, that you fland in such absolute need of an Image, that you cannot awaken your Zeal without it: But if

you pretend that your spirit is carried out after your Saviour, that you do not at all mind the Image; of what use then is it? Could you not without it do what the Word of God Commands, (viz.) Worship God in Spirit and in Truth? Think you that a Marmouser, or Image can inspire you with such thoughts as are necessary for your Salvation? and ha'n't you reason to expect from converse with God in Spirit by means of Prayer, such bleffings as are much more great and singular? Come then to your self, and be ashamed of using what Christ never approved of, and which disturbs the mind in, and turns it from its best Meditation.

Such things as are the Objects of fense, and have an External refemblance given them, which depend on the will or skill of the Painters or Engravers, are far more capable of finking man into vain and frivolous Imaginations, than of freeing them from them. Thus we see that most Catholicks do insensibly suffer their Devotion to run out after the Image rather than the Original. You fay what you please Brother, (faid 1) and charge us with fuch things as are very remote from our true sentiments; I'll charge you (said he) with nothing but what I'll preve. Is it not certain, that amongst all the Images of Jesus Christ and Crucifixes, some are more honoured than others? You fee great Crucifixes in Churches, before which every Body proftrate thenselves; these are great Lords in comparison of the poor Crucifixes, that are on Brigdes and high-ways, who are happy enough, if one amongst a thousand moves his Cap at them.

If all Crucifixes serve to represent to you your Saviour nailed to the Cross, they have all one and the same dignity, nor ought you to show more respect to some, than to others; seeing their dignity results not from the matter whereof they are made, nor the skill of the Workman, who gives them what Figure he pleaseth; why then do youmake so great a difference between them, that you'll scarce vouch-

bu

d

c

111

011

1

bh

15 (

nd

aid

en

I

r li

te

ti

11

ne

ve

a

bd

0

CI

P

t

ic

T

n

ret

1 1

tr.

ate

G

bte

illy

others

fale some of them so much as a look, when you fall on your knees before others? what answer will you make to this? I fay (replyed I) if we make any di-Mindion between these Images, 'tis because some of them do more naturally and livelily represent our Saviour, than others do, and consequently are more capable of warming our Zeal: So that (replyed he fcottingly) your Zeal depends in part on the hand of Carver or Painter; I believe (added he) you your felves would laugh at fuch reasons: But know, that if it be good to make use of Images, as helps of Devotion, according to your Principles the same honour must be rendred to all! To those whose workmanship discover least skill as well as others; because, as I said before, their dignity results not from their Matter or Figure, but from the Original, whose Images they are, or rather from the End men aimed at in fetting them up, to represent Jesus Christ: So that if you make any difference between Images, etther as made of more excellent materials, or with greater Art, and if you honour some more than you do others, you thereby show that your mind is amore fixed upon the Image, than on the Original, and confequently can't free your felves from being guilty of a kind of Idolatry.

Idolatry, faid I, (interrupting him,) I am not yetfo ignorant, but I know the difference between Images and Idols; and I believe none can justly charge
me with Idolatry, for having before me the Image
of my Saviour, when I adore him. They are Idolaters who believe there is force Deity in the Images
themselves; but for such who regard them only as
representations, and whose mind tend only to the
Original, they certainly can't deserve this Name,
Many Catholicks, (replyed my Brother,) yea even
most, believe that there is an hidden Vertue in some
Images, whether Crucifixes or others, which work
Miracles, which others don't do. Every body runs
after these Miracle-working Images, whereas the

there are comparatively but little regarded. I ask ou now, whether fuch as flock to thefe Images, don's deed believe that they have some divine Vertue, or e reverence them only as fimple Images? If they fay at God hath chosen these Images to manifest his ower by rather than others. God looks on Images onas wood ftone, or any other matter, and 'ris injurious his Infinite Majesty to make him accompany with s efficacy dead things, the works of mens hands. nd fuch as mens hands can also destroy: And whence aid 1) come the Miracles which are wrought by em? Moit of them (answered he) are meer chears. I might prove by innumerable Examples, and as r others, God fuffers them to happen as Evidences his wrath against a People given up to a reprote Spirit, and the Efficacy of Errour, as he fufferthe Magicians of Pharaoh to work Miracles : I am ling to believe that some Crucifixes have wept; hers have spoken, others have laught, and others ve bowed their heads. The Devil is the Author all their operations, and not God; for when od discovers any miraculous work, he makes no of Images or Idols made by men, unless it be cause them to fall to the ground, as he did Dabefore the Ark of the Covenant . But he frows power on men themselves, making them accord. to what they are, whether proud or humble. Objects of his terrible Justice, or elfe of his Inte Mercy.

Thas been always the Devils great design to estable In Idolatry in the World, and this design he mageth according to what he finds men to be, where more refined, or gross and blockssh. At prest seeing that men are grown more subtile than cr, he proposeth to them an Idolatry more deate and disguised. I scruple not to affirm, that e Guides of the Church of Rome, concur to propose the Devils work: For what do they so earlily press the People to the worship of Images,

but only to hinder them from forming an Idea of a Religion that's purely Spiritual? For according their Maxim, Mens minds must be kept low, the they may be the better governed, and may the mon quictly and without contradiction bear the Tyran ny of their Spiritual Rulers: And this is the Devi Maxim too, And feeing that People are grow more refined than ever they were, he would not offer them to gross an Idolatry as reigns amongst the barba rous Pagans, but a subtile Idolatry, which is afted unde another Name, and in different ways, and confitts the worthip of Images, as iris practifed in the Churc of Rome: For the Spirit of darkness very well knows the the Spirit of Manis too weak of it self to attain to Spiritual Worship, and that on the contrary 'tis of tie to make it embrace a groffer Worship, by de guising things under other shapes. And 'twas fo this End that he introduced the worship of I nage pretending at first that he only offered them as help whereby men might be enabled to ferve God to more eafily, but he well knew that Images wou certainly prive a flumbling-block; fo that me would intentibly pass from the adoration of Go and from his worthip to the adoration and worth of Images, directly and fimply, without ever min ing the Original.

The Church of Rome deals with the People, is as Nurses do with Children, busving them with Ba bies and Poppets. Thus it amufeth the People wi Images, as though there were some Deity inclosed them, or that God chose to manifest his Power fuch Organs. And indeed those Biggors of bo Sexes that are mad after these follies, deserve be dealt with as Children are. Oh my Sifter, fa ded he) did you know how God acts by his Wort and how it raiseth our Souls up to Heaven to se Christ, who reigns there eternally, you would a delay one moment to burn your Crucifixes, and

your Images.

18

by

ſa

.

pi

10

10

e

hi.

a in

lo

c

10

en

br

er

CI

ad

ma

re

hai

ub

he

wa

4 0

ou

uc

vas

vid

Eurn them! (faid I, flartling at the very exprefon,) that's Devilish advice indeed, and well beoming an Heretick; who ever foake of burning the faure of him whom he honoured, respected, and oved above all others? what greater affront to leis Chrift than this? Yes Sifter, added he, burn 'em. fav, burn'em, and let not this alarm you. Ought re not to get rid of that-which knits and tyes our pirits to mater, and so to get rid of it, as never fore to fee it? Hath not our Lord faid, If thy right and offend thre cut it off, and if thy right eye offend thee to it out? Much more ought we to cast away note stones of offence, if they are any wife the oc-0 afions of fin; and we need not fear offending God fo doing, under pretence that the Images we defirov e his, for God never commanded us to make thefe mages, or to worship him by them; Men have ade them according to their own Fancies and Imanation, and have fet them them up, not for the lory of God, but for their own secret designs, and e ought to destroy all that is contrary to God's lory.

You have doubtless heard of that wonderful braen Serpent, which God himself caused to be made or the cure of those that were bitten by the fiery erpents: for apon their looking towards it, all that ere bitten were immediately cured. This Serpent ad three great Prerogatives, which none of your mages ever had; for first it was made by Gods ex-res Command, which can be said of no other Ihage; then by means of it many great Miracles, inubitable Miracles were wrought in the fight of all he People, after an easie and effectual manner; for was but to look upon it, and they were immediatev cured of what was in it felf very painful and grieous, and would otherwise have been in its conseuences very fatal. The finest Crucifix that ever vas made, can do nothing worthy to be compared with this. Laftly, 'twas a Type of Jefus Christ himfelf.

felf, by looking on whom by Faith, we are deliver be ed from the real fiery Scrpenes: For thus faith S. John D. in the 14th Chapter of his Gotpel, As Moles lifted his up the Serpent in the de art, so mult alfo the Son a rac

man be lifted up.

These Reasons seem to plead strongly not only for op its preservation in Memory of the past Miracles, and to ut be an Image of him that was to come; but also for is its being reverenced. And the People of Ifrael seemed call more excusible in adoring it than you are in adoring her your Crucifixes because twas to them an Image of his of whom they had a very imperfect knowledge; where as now Christ is come, and we have a much more perfelt knowledge of line than the Antient Tews had, and therefore have no need of a material Image to repre fent to us our Saviour? But what became of this braze Tis Serpent? His ceins who was a good Prince a Prince fear and ing God; fixing that the People offered incense to it of the broke it and flamped it to powder, had he done ill, he me would have been punished, or at least reproved whi whereis on the contrary his keigh was very happy and bleffed of God, because without amusing him felf with the formyles of the Vulgar, he had taken away from this People the subject or occasion of ide had larry. We may learn hence how good 'tis to de stroy all that may cause us to err, not sparing it of a larry reason. any reason, or specious pretence whatever.

God was pleased to manifest his presence in a pecurar manner in his Aik of the Covenant; for that he caused the wonders of his Majesty to appear where ever it was carried; he divided Rivers, threw down the Walls of Cities, , cauled the Idols to fall before it, smore thousands of those that durst look into it, afflifted the Philisting grievous and shameful Distempers, slew fuc's as prefumed only to touch it, and bleffed those with whom it was lodged: Yet that he might remove every thing that might occasion any breach in the true Devotion of his People, especially when

cite

is

ro 111 nd

11

PR

10

17

d

11

thi

h

ca

nd

ol 10:

fo e,

or tic

LTV ed

he Gospel was to be preached, he suffered this Ark p perish in the burning of Jerulalem, that the Jews hight not have any thing to hinder them from emracing the Gospel.

Yet Sifter (added he) I don't fay these things for perswade you to burn your Crucifixes and Images, in the control of the cont to ut only to justifie the expression I made use of; for is unreasonable to burn any thing, unless we have eason to sear it may cause our fall; we may keep them as things that are indifferent, and I cannot approve of the indiscreet Zeal of some Hugonots, that the usic themselves in breaking in pieces all the Images and Statues they meet with. True Piety shows not ad Statues they meet with. True Piety shows not iclf outragious, it contents its felf with withdrawing its own foot, without scandalizing the weak. Its true, God often inspired his People to cast away is the things as might cause them to err, according to the Prophesse of Isaiah, Ch. 2. v. 20. In that day man shall cast his Idols of silver, and his Idols of gold, which they made each one for himself to worship, to the felf outragious, it contents its felf with withdrawthen they made take Bats. This Prophesse was suffilled then the darkness of Paganism began to be dissipated, I may also say, when the true light caused the hadows of Popery to siee away.

My Brother seeing that I took a singular delight hearing him, and that I were somewhat touched ith his Discourses, was about to have continued, hen we heard a noise at our Chamber door, at hich I looked pale with sear; for had my Mother eard us, I must have paid dear for our Discourse, and perhaps my Brother too. But he being more old than I, went to open the door, and found that was my Father, who came into the Chamber with fmiling Countenance: I confess, my Children, faid e, that I made you very much afraid, but I am or come to diffurb you, nor to break off a Convertion with which I am extreamly delighted. Aftrwards, turning to me, I am, faid he, very well pleaed with your Brother for whar he hath faid, and

With

with you for hearing him; I shall only add this one word: If God by his means touch your heart, don't kick against the Pricks, nor be obstinate against the Holy Spirit, when he speaks to your Conscience Your Brother doth what I ought to have done were it not for the solemn Oath I kave too rash raken, Never to discourse of Religion with my Daughters, with which I might well dispense, did I no consider that God hath given me a Son who had Knowledge and Zeal enough for the performance

of this Duty.

Indeed Father, (faid my Brother,) you may we allow me this Liberty, feeing my Mother commanded my Sifier to rempt me to change my Religion Then you conspire, Justine, with your Mother (fair my Father) to feduce your Brother; I am ver glad I know it, we will make use of Reprisals: But my Children, use more prudence another time who you discourse, for had your Mother heard you, a she might have done, there would have been dreadful adoe, and Ferdinand would have had no more reason to boast of his Mothers Favour. After this my Father retired, leaving us to discourse in the mean time my Brother placed the Chess-board on the Table, with some Verses which he took out of his Pocket.

V

This Precaution was not needless, for my Mothe had her Spies, who informed her that both my Father and my Brother were in my Closet; she was distrustful enough in matters of Conscience feared least in attempting to gain my Brother schoold lose me, and therefore came to listen to on Discourse; but my Brother having lest the Doord my Closet open, I could easily discover all that came nto my Chamber; and seeing my Mother, I gaw my Brother notice of it by signs, who seemed engaged in Play: my Mother seeing that she was discovered, came into my Closet, and said to us smiling, Ah Youth, youth, can you find nothing where

che to imploy your selves but. Plays and Trisses? I cheve (answered my Brother very readily,) that ou have made an agreement with my Father to hide us: And why did he chide you, (said she) he amed me that I did nothing but lose my time, ad told me that in three days he would send me the Army; Did your Father say so, replyed my lother, but he shall not be Master of his own Resonants without seeing him, and would he now he is at just returned snatch him again out of my Arms; swear he shall never do it; and I would sain know that he intends you should do in the Army, unless we your Brains knockt out. Indeed your Father very unnatural.

日本の日本日の古古の

10 M

Ah, Ferdinand, Ferdinand, your Mother loves you re more tenderly; she would not only have you re to be her Comfort, but would willingly give e better part of her blood, that you might obtain other Life that endures for ever, which you can ver hope for, while you remain what you are. I ank you, Mother (said he) with all my heart, for e Charity you discover towards me; 'tis enough y Mother, that 'tis by you I enjoy this Life, as the other I exped it from him who hath formed y Soul: But Son (said she) you are not in the sy to obtain it. I understand you Mother, replyhe, you would perswade me that the Roman Rejon is the only Religion that leads to Heaven; but we can you desire me to believe it, since it orins all Catholicks to be in a perpetual doubt of eir Salvation. I can never believe, that that willing me to happines, which requires me to doubt bether ever I shall partake of it.

Here my Mother was struck dumb, and though e was a Woman of spirit, ver she could not carry this stroak. And my Brother who saw that he d spoken too freely, began to mollisse what had said, by telling her that he would not absolutely condemn the Catholick Religion, in which were many things that he approved of though they were much difficed by other Hugonots. On the contrary, said he, the Religion of Calvin seems to me a little too Naked and void of Ceremonies. Hereupon some came to call my Mother, who then only said, I pray God and the Holy Virgin, to Enlighten you, and so left us. Yet seeing it was somewhat late, we were sorced to break off our Conversation for this time.

I thought fir, dear Ladies, said Madamifelle at St. Phale, to rehearse these things at large, to show you the means which it pleased God to make use of to bring me to the Knowledge of his Truth; what I have surther to tell you, is more curious than the beginning. I perceive, said Madamiselle Leonora, by what you have already said, that the History of your Life must have somewhat very singular in it, which I impatiently long to hear from you; but seeing it is somewhat late, and you have spoken enough, I believe you would be willing to Dine before you continue your charming Relation: Indeed Dinner was sound to be just ready, which was over in an instant. They walked some time after Dinner on the Deck, and then returned into the Cabbin, where Madamoiselle de St. Phale continued her Relation.

CHAP

Bi

R

di

In

th

D

Spin

te

h

CHAP. II.

The Could not once close my Eyes for sleep the whole Night after I had had this Discourse with my Brother; I knew not what reason I had for my Religion, I was convinced that he had some for his, and even before he had faid any thing to me, I was dilgusted with many things in the Church of Rome. In the Morning I fell into a short Nap, in which I had fuch a Dream as disturbed me more than all the reft. Merhought I faw my Father fick unto Death, who faid unto me, Justina, God who takes from you your earthly Father, will himself be a Father to you, on Condition that you ferve him in Spirit and Truth, which you cannot do, whilft you make Profession of those Superflucers in which you have been Educated; if you renounce it, and finterely embrace the Religion of our Churches, you shall indeed be terribly Persecuted and stript of your Estate, but yet vi shall end your days in happiness and tranquil ty of spirit, and when you leave this Life. hall enter on another, in compariton of which, the choicest Enjoyments in this World are but Vaniey and Emptinels: But if you obstinately resist the Will of your God, you sall dve miserably, in the most grievous Troubles and Despair, which shall be the forerunners of Eternal Torments. These words methought were his last, Death preventing his speakng any more. When I awoke, my Eyes were full of Tears, and I was terribly disquieted for three days with this Dream, so that I resolved to get my felf instructed by my Brother, both in my own Religion, and in that of the Hugonots.

I was scarce got out of my Bed, before I saw my Erother coming into my Chamber; as soon as I saw him, I sent my Waiting Gentlewoman on an

Errand, and he without lofing any time, faid Sifter, I am come to wish you a good Morning, no do I come empty handed, seeing I bring you whe is more worth than the Crown of our King. You are then (faid I) much inriched this Night, re ceiving his Present, which was the New Testament very nearly bound. You faid yesterday, (added he) that you Worshiped your Crucifix to excit Piecy, lay afide your Crucifix and read the Hol Scripture, you will foon find whether the Word of God be not much more powerful than an impotent Image. I thanked him, and promifed to potent Image. I thanked him, and promifed to follow his Advice; after which he left me, to fall the my Mother, towards whom he was very example.

In the mean time I opened the New Testament, an found that he had Written in the Frontispiece of the Book, these words of the Revelation, Behold I fland a the Door and brock, it any one hear my Voice an even to me, I will come in to him, and sap with him, and he with me. I well understood my Brothers Intention in writing this Passage, which I foon applyed to my felf. After this I withdres into my Closer, where I read the History of our Lord's Passion, Death and Refurrection, as 'ris written in the twenty fixth, twenty feventh and twenty eighth Chapters of St. Matthew. This reading in all my Life. After my Prayed to God so hearth ftill, and I found that as I read, the Word made a paffage into my Soul, which filled me with unexpressible Joy. Hereupon my Brother came to me, to Conduct me into my Mothers Chamber who was aftonished at my negligence, but before I left my own Chamber, I carefully lockt up my New-Testament, which many Reasons obliged me to keep fafe.

en

bn

hie

ri

ne

d

80

c

n

u

ì,

2

11

17

01

a

t

R

ti

tf

5,

re

hi

un s,

n;

My Mother as foon as the faw me, faid unto e, You have been very fluggish to day, and oking more earnestly upon me, What Langour (and fle) is that that I fee in your Eyes? I dare a Wager that you have not flept, but have ent a good part of the Night in reading some omance: I was very loath to undeceive her, for hich Reason I returned no Answer. Hereupon my ther came to us, inviting us into the Garden, here as he walked on the one fide, my Brother d I walked on the other. 'Twas there that I anked him yet again for his Present, and opened Heart to him, declaring that I found many ngs in the Church of Rome which I could not bear, could not as yet refolve to forfake it. Sifter, reed he, 'tis fit to examine things seriously before forfake any thing, especially in matters of Relin; hold faft vour Religion in which you have been ucared, till you are convinced that it is not the t, and that there is another far more excellent, then you cannot in Conscience adhere to what are perswaded is more desedive, and negled at is more perfect. This day we had a Discourse two hours, about Transubstantiation, and the day owing another about Justification by Works. another day she spake to me about the Sacri-for the Living and the Dead, offered up by hands of the Priest; but that which he most I endeavoured to prove, was, That the Courch Rome could not be the true Church. 'Twould be tedious, should I relate all that he faid to me, the arguments which he urged to prove his affers, which made me doubt least I were in the false reh, and refolve to enter into the true one. hree weeks passed in these Discourses, and when and any Arguments to oppose against my Bros, I always refifted him; but he foon answered

2-

u,

3 ny

EC

n; at length I declared to him the disposition of Spirit, which much rejoyced him: Yet he

judged

judged this business to be of such Importance, the he thought fit to make my Father acquainted with it, which he did: So that as my Mother was on day employed in looking over some certain Ad counts, my Father called me into his Chambe where I found my Brother: Daughter, faid he, hear some News that pleaseth me extreamly, ma I believe it? Yes Father, answered I, and if vo please to hear me, I shall give you full satisfaction Hereupon he asked me several Questions, to which I returned such Answers, as did not at all displea him. 'Tis enough (laid he) for the present, n turn now to your Mother; yet my Daughter, a ded he, if you constantly persist in this holy st solution, I assure you that come what will, the Bless of God will never fail you, and your heavenly Fath will accomplish in Heaven the Prayers which yo Earthly Father hath here made for you. Thele and tendernels of these Expressions forced to from my Eyes, I find, aniwered I, that G opens my understanding more and more, I reco make fuller discoveries of his Truth to me. I Juline, yes my Daughter, faid he very affectionate I'll go into my Closet to pray for you. But this not enough, you your felf must also address w humble prayers to our good God, who abounds Eternal Grace and Mercy, that he would finish work in your Heart: And you Ferdinand, fail i to do the same thing; and ascribe not to your the Glory of having converred your Sister, butg it all to God, who alone hath dominion over t Heart.

V

n

n

A

d

P' rr

11 cl

u.

at

ug'

DIL y

ing Tru

ung

mily

infe hauc

My Mother being still imployed, I went it my Closet to perform what my Father had co manded, and to recommend my felf to God, wh after I had finished, I found my self more fin resolved, and more chearful than I was best expeding till God should give me a favourable

ortunity to put my Defign in Execution: on the ther hand my Mother was not idle, being earnefily int on my Brothers Conversion. My Brother who id prudence and subtilty enough for the managent of such an Affoir, did not absolutely reject is Proposition, nor did he approve of it, but fiered her to entertain some hopes, that he might be time or other be wrought upon. How often we we laugh'd about this Intricate adventure, in at my Mother hoping to change her Son, made to of her Daughter to this end; and my Father ade use of his Son to convert his Daughter, which last succeeded, whereas all my Mothers designs and into smooth.

We had need to be very careful to hide all thefe ngs from my Mother, who was a Woman of that mper, that had the had the least notice of what fled, the would have caused me to have been card away by force, and kept in a Convent all my . There happened at that time two things, which ped much to deceive my Mother, one was, that Catholick Gentleman endeavoured to get me in triage. Although my Mother had resolved in her n Mind to beflow me on him, yet she would clude on nothing till the had made my Father mainted with it, with whom the always lived in at Love and Peace. My Father would not in s bufiness act as Master; seeing (said he) my ughter hath been educated in your Religion, I nmit the management of her wholly to you, you y do with her what you please. Yet Madam, ing you are pleased to Consult me about this rriage, I shall freely declare my Judgment. The ung Man of whom you speak is indeed of a good mily, yet this Family is much in Debt: And I informed, That this Young Man is too great a hauchee for a Virgin of that worth as our Daugh-15, who deserveth a better Lot. Yet Madam,

SA THE SA

you are wholly Mistreis of her; she is intirely a your disposal, and I know that you'l do nothing the is a disparagement to your Prodence, seeing that Ifree ly confentto whatever you shall judge requisite. Indee faid my Mother, fince you deal fo freely with m in this matter, I affure you that you shall be Maste of her deftiny, and provided the marry a Catholic my Will shall be wholly refigned to yours. I had mind, answered my Father, to propose to you Catholick Gentleman, whose Manners, Wisdom and sweetness of Disposition extreamly please me eis Madam the Son of your Coufin German, Mada de ____ This was what my Mother most define for the tenderly loved this Gentleman her Couls who indeed had all the Qualities that comma Esteem. I thank you, replyed my Mother, that w are pleased to prefer my Relations before other but fince I fee you have fo good an opinion of his I defire that they may be Married as foon as pos ble. I defire it as well as you, answered my Fathe but we must endeavour that he first get some Off in the Army; and to this end we must declare the we will not give her to a simple Volunteer; and Friends, whose Interest is very great, will not fail getting him some Earployment. My Mother like this Advice extreamly well, and resolved to confi in my Father, more than ever the had hither done.

7

.

1

a

11

eft

u

6

hg

th

be

121

The other thing was, that my Father seemed make my Mother his Consident, in some things a lating to my Brother. It much troubles me, is he, that Ferdinand thus loseth his time he and were it not for the respect which I see y have for him, I had sent him before now backs to the Army, or into Germany or England. At a other time my Mother would have returned a ry sharp Answer to this Discourse, but my Fath had showed so much complassance for her, that

urft not contradict him to his face. Sir, faid fhe, I had or feen my Son thefe ten years, and would you take im from me again, when I have fearce enjoyed his ompany two Months? No Madam, replyed my ather, I will not take him from you, but I am fraid hee'l go away himself, for I see that this unfive idle life which he leads in this Country, doth or at all fuit with his humour : 'Tis natural with him be in action, and the contrary must needs be tedius; he can't always Play, or Walk, or Hunt, or Difpurse, these things serve to refresh the Mind, but nnor fatisfie it. Let me speak with him, faid my other, it may be I may induce him to change his ind; where is he? I'll talk with him by and by. think, replyed my Father, he is in the Garden. amediately my Mother called me to walk with her my Brother.

We found my Brother fitting near a Fountain, a Profound Meditation, for he was confidering the urse he ought to take to make me abjure the Erurs of the Church of Rome. We surprized him in s Posture, and my Mother raised him from his ep study, by giving him a gentle blow on the oulder with her hand: What are you thinking Firainand, faid she, that you are in such a study. declare my Mind to you, (Mother faid he,) ough I dare not do it to my Father. I would return to the Army, what would you have me here to pick Straws? Lay afide thefe thoughts, my Mother, why would you return thither to e your Brains knockt our, and make me the ft miferable of all Mothers? What think you uld I do, should I lose my only Son, on whom best hopes are placed? 'Twere indeed someng if you had any grounds to expect Preferment; thirgs are at that pass at present, that there be nothing hoped for in favour of those of your igion; for should you perform the bravest Acti-

n Ga en

ons, and do the King all imagina le Service, 'two all be looke on as nothing whilst you are an Hagen My Brother replied only with a deep figh, who made my Mother believe the fall what was in bottom of his heart, but the was deceived. Ye figh Ferdinand, fand the, and fay nothing, but I a you once again, that as long as you are an Hugon you will rever get any Advancement: But I'll d course with you more to morrow Morning, fail a to come to nie to my Chamber; go for the prefe

and think on what I have faid to you.

When he had left us, my Mother faid to me Your Brother diflikes several things in the Religi of Calcin, and approves of many things in or moreover he is somewhat ambinious, let us go my Daughter, and firske whill the Iron is hot, thall certainly make fome impression on aim ones or other. Twilb a ditheult work, (answered he is more fixed than you imagine. No matter ! plyed my Mother) the merit of it will be t great before God, and the honour before men; you do your part, and I'll no mine; we daily Conversions wrought that feened far more diffe than his; yea, were at first adequated impossi If your Brother will be guided by Reafon, ra than by the Countels of your Father, Ill fer i Learned Men upon him, as must needs conv him : And if he hath any America, I'll get he *discourse with such, as have at present all the por in their own hands, who will not fail of making Fortune, whereof they give him all the afterance can defire. Only let it be your endeavour to m him capable of good Advice, and above all to person the his giving my Father an Account of the poffeth.

1

Ž

16

un

it

In the mean time my brother, as form as he lest us went into my Fathers Apparentert, and the ted all that my Mother had faid to him; my fa

efe

m 121

00

0

t,

en

ed

1

n; lv

fi fi

ad

141

115 201

ng

102

N IN

el

£4. -

if

of gave him an account of that that passed between m and my Mother, to prevent her discovering the cir Designs, adding. That he saw well enough that this Good Woman intended, but that by the Yeace of God all her Designs should come to noting, and his have their desired success. Some ort time after as I returned from the Garden with dy Mother, seeing her busie in giving Orders about the Concerns of the Family, I ian immediately or the busies I sound my Broker. o gave him an account of that that passed between Fathers Lodgings, where I found my Brother. from as my Father faw me, So, faid he to me, ou act in concert with your Mother, for the Convern or rather pervertion of your Brother : Two Woin, aniwered I, are too weak to encounter one n; but my Mother resolves to send some Doctors my Brother, against whom he shall never be able defend himself, and hereupon I related all that Mother had discovered of her Deign. You have ne very well, faid my Father, to inform us of this; now, added he, I would have you to return, fear least your Mother should perceive you have ken with me. Thus my Father and Mother ployed their utmost artifice to deceive each faken in her reckoning. My Brother told me re, that my Father seemed somewhat troubled he Methods which my Mother resolved to follow: I efee (find he to my Brother,) that you will be posed to great temptations. I am not so much aid of the arguments of the Learned, as I am of ie of such as are in Power, when they shall retent to you the Offices, Prosperity and Pleasure ich voa shall enjoy, if you embrace the Romin n more eafily feize on the minds of fuch as are ing, than of theirs that are farther advanced in e: Be not confident of your own strength, but it only in God. I know, faid my Brother, that if I trust in my own strength, I am the weakest M of al men, but if I place my confidence in the Lord. I am stronger than the whole World. After this my Father gave him leave to retire. Nothing more

confiderable happened this day.

But the next Morning my Brother went to my Mothers Appartment, and found her in her Closer; the no fooner understood that he was come, but the commanded him to come in and fit down by her, which he at first modestly refusing to do, Ferdinand, faid the, I now lay afide my Character of Mother, to speak to you as a Friend; and therefore without any more adoe fit down by me, which me Brother doing without returning any Answer; he shedding some tears, spake thus to him in a ton

that argued a great deal of tendernels.

I can never, faid the, look upon you without has ing my Heart agitated with contrary Patlions, who I confider that I have in you a Son, both Wife, Ho nest, and Valiant; I cannot but rejovce and account my felf the happiest of all Women, this being an your which God doth not youchfafe to all Mother but when I confider on the other hand, That the Son whom I love, who is so proper a Person, and much effeemed by all, and who hath such Nob Inclinations; hath been brought up in a falle m Heretical Religion, and perfifts in it, it extorts from me the birterest tears, and it grieves me that I en brought you into the World. O Ferdinand, Ferd nand, did you know all that passed in my Heart of this account, and the Compassion that I have for you you would have more Complaifance for me than not you have. More the could not speak, her fighs flor ping her Discourse.

Mother, replyed my Brother, (who was touche to fee her fo much concerned) there's not a to you shed but is worse than a Dagger to my Hear water shy do you thus give way to your Sorrow. I kno

h

th

kn

C41

rea

ver

bu

Pre

nv

m

0

Rel

111

en

lw

ha

,

hat

111

vitl

no

12

11

ou. rill

rop

hui

ere bea

ich

ki If v

e m

lace

Mother, that 'tis a maternal Compassion which you have for me; but it may be 'tis a blind Compassion, that flows only from your Prejudices. I wish you that flows only from your respudices hath for you knew how far the respect your Son hath for you and therefore I declare, That if any can convince me that I am in a false Religion, I am ready to embrace the Religion which shall be proved to be better, for I will not be led by Obitinacy, but by Reason: To this end I now lay aside all my Prejudices which I may have taken up in favour of my Religion, and against yours; and am ready to selegion. My Mother was mightily well pleased at his Declaration, and said, I take you to your word, temember to keep it: Yes Mother, (said he) I shall lways remember this, That if any can convince me hat I am in an Errour, I must not rest in it: The said of embrace freely your Religion if I find it better, or s, replyed my Mother, that if I bring you a Man hat shall remove all your Doubts and Scruples, you ill come over to us. Yes Mother (answered he) vith all my Heart; for I should be very unhappy, If nowing I were in an evil way I would not be perwaded to leave it: If you will (added my Mother) Il bring you acquainted with fuch as can advance ou, and bestow honourable Offices on you, if you ill embrace our Religion: Every thing hath its roper feasion, (answered my Brother smiling) I built not be exposed to so many affaults at once. ercupon my Brother role up, and paying his repects to my Mother, left her abundantly fatisfied ith this Conversation, for she believed she had getten kind of Conquest over him; and flattered her is with hopes, that all that he said, was only that e might turn his Coat with a better Grace, as those laces who expect the Canon before they Capialare.

h:

\a c

111 6 nv

111

h

av

in

ag

150 im ou

1

her gh

Gra

ne nc

у, m

re

rec 110

Nothing now remained to be done, but the affigning the day for the Dispute; for the person who n my Mother had chosen to oppose my Bro. th ther, was her Confessor, the Father Matthew, a Jo au fuir, one that was Learned enough, but yet bette ha flored with Malice than Learning. (I'my felf have felt fome effects of his Malice, which is the reason her why I have the whole Order, and dealt so rough yesterday with those two disguised Brothers). A length the day was appointed, which was to be the ne Morrow after my Father should go to Diren to so low a Suit he had depending before the Parliamer of that Place; for my Mother took special care is for his part, was as careful to prefend that he kne nothing of them: As for my Brother and I, we d tembled our intentions well enough. At length, a Elening before my Father was to take his los net, as we were about to fit down to Suppe my Father faid to my Brother, As foon as you ha foor, put up such things as will be necessary in you fourney, for you shall ride with me: My Month hearing this, was very much alarmed; How S (laid she) do you intend that Ferdinand shall go w you? will you leave us all alone? 'Tis time, Mada faid my Father, that he be acquainted with the A fairs of our Family, you know of what Confequent the Suit is that I go a out, I must have some but to help me. My Mother was struck dumb we riccie words, and knew not what answer to mit Methinks Madain (faid my Father) you are more on cerned at Firdinand's absence than at mine. I would answered she, comfort my self with the Son, de ring his Fathers Absence; but since you are resolve hat to carry him with you, you may do what you this his fir. We'l Mydam (replyed he) I'll leave him wit von, fince you so earneflly defire it; but one thing tely chargey ou, that you fuffer humnor to go from our hor out a fill my return, for I will not have him depart 'rill have discourted more largely with him. After his we sare down at Table, having a great mind to augh at the Trouble which my Father's Discourse had caused my Mother.

Supper seing ended, my Mother withdrew into her Chamber to write to Dijon, where some of her Relations were Members of the Parliament, to whom he recommended her Husbands Business; in the mean time my ha her caused my Brother and me to salk up i to his: When we were come before him. e flood fome time without speaking one word; at ength, My Children, (faid he) I am not ignorance I what is defigned to be done in my House during ny absence; I know, Firdinand, that your Perseve-ance will be tryed; you are walking in a Path in thich many Persons have fall'n, and the falls of most ave proved deadly; they will promife you Mounains and Miracles, but know that Temporal advanages as well as Eternal Riches are in God's disposal. hove all, I advise you to humble your felf before im, begging him to inftruct, affift and maintain ou, by the invincible force of his Holy Spirit.

My Brother answered with a modelt boldness, Faher, said he, God hath vouchsafed me to enjoy the ight by your means, and I believe he'll give me the brace to imitate you in your Perseverance; and give he leave to say, that though you should be to me nexample of Weakness as you are now of Constanty, I would no longer follow your Example, that might follow those of my Ancestors. Yes, my Son, replyed my Father) if God so far forsake me, I recly permit you, not only not to follow me, but the to hate me; but the Spirit of God assures me, hat this shall neither be mine nor your Case, and in his Hope I beg the Lord to bless you. Immeditely my Father went into his Closet, and brought out a Sword of Damaseus Mettal, whose Handle was

pre

Bro

VOU

Ble

ef

Ero

Pia

n l

n 1

co

NAS

h

Me

att

n

er

Tru ha

ha o Sif

or

hot

ne 1

10

u

ы

s t

ny o:

enriched with Stones, but its greatest Preciousness lay in the Excellency of the Steel whereof it was made. After my Bleffing, faid he, this is the rich. est Present that I can make you, 'ris my Sword, and it hath been the Sword of your Grandfather, and great Grandfather, with which they have glorioully ferved the true Religion and the King, and have bathed it in the Blood of the Enemies of the Faith and of the State; and I also have made some use of it with good success in my time. Hereupon my Brother fell on his Knees, and my Father drawing the Sword out of its Scabbard, faid to him, I now give you this Sword on the same Conditions on which I received it, viz. That you never use it but in the Service of God and the King, your Mafter and lawful Sovereign: Follow not the Course of those Temporizers and base Politicians, who abandon our poor Churches; maintain them to the utmost of your power, and if they perish, perish with them: But the Lord of Hosts grant that it may prosper in you hands, and that it may be as honourably delivered into the Hands of your Children, as it hath been into mine, and as I have delivered it into yours. Here upon he struck him a fost blow with the flat fide of the Sword on the Arm, and putting it up into the Scabbard, delivered it to him, and obliged him to arife. My Brother after having received it, drew it once again, and kiffing the middle of the Blade, laid it on the ground, and falling again on his Knees faid to my Father, After the two Presents which you Sir, have made me, you have no reason to be furprized if I want words wherewith to thank your fuffer me therefore to embrace your Knees, but my Father raising him from the ground, embraced him, and afterwards gave him some Advice relating to his Behaviour.

I was present when all these things passed, and mg was much affected with them. My Father fixing good

his Eves on me, faid to me, Be not jealous of the Present I have made your Brother. I love my Brother too well (faid 1) to envy him the Favour you are pleased to show him. I'll give you also my Bleffing and a Present, replyed my Father, which effeem no less than that I have bestowed on your Erother; and immediately gave me a very curious licture, drawn in small, representing a Woman who n her time was an admirable Beauty, the Box also n which twas kept was fet with Diamonds. This continued he) was the Picture of my Mother, who vas in her Life an Example of Virtue and Piety, and hope you will imitate a Grandmother of fuch great Merit: I must tell you this of her, that she was Eduated in the Romish Religion as you have been, by n Aunt that brought her up, yet God having given per a penetrating Spirit, the eafily diffinguish'd the ruth from Lyes. I hope Daughter (added he) hat you will imitate her more ways than one, and hat what I give you is well bestowed. I intended o have fallen on my Knees to have received this fift with the greatest Respect, as my Brother had lone, but my Father perceiving my Defign, would not fuffer it, but embraced me most tenderly, gave ne his Bleffing and some serious Advice.

Immediately after this Mystery was finished, my shother entred the Chamber, and pleasantly seemed to blame my Father with having sallen into the same ault for which he had accused her, in not being ble to part with his Children. My Father made is the he had not heard her, and said to her, Will ou Madam, that I take my leave of you this Night it to Morrow Morning: To Morrow Morning, said my Mother, for we'll Break-sast with you before you so: Ee it so, answered my Father. Thus he less thouse, to give my Mother the opportunity of dong what he very well knew, though he scenied to be

gnorant of it.

My Father was not a Mile off, when my Mother is fent for her Confessor, who whilst my Mother, m or Brother, and my self, were in the Garden, camen best us. Brother, said I, look well to your self, I doub und you will hardly be able to hold out against an ok woo Man, who hath spent his Days in Disputations an ness Books. Why should I not be able to do it? (rephybel and the Erocher;) Datid who was but a Youth, as both had nothing but a Sling and Stones, smore down Goliah, who was a Gyant compleatly armed. The one Example is not enough to make a Rule, faid I tis a rare thing for the weak to overcome the ftrong but 'tis very ordinary for the flrong to vanquish the

My Brother would have answered me, but the le fuite prevented him, by coming to falute him; the were abundance of Civilities passed between them and the Father who was well skill d in Flattery, spate the most obliging things in the World to my Bro ther, who returned a modest Answer: But whe his turn came, he fell upon the Praises of the Fa ther in so curious a manner, that the Jesuite judged from that time, that his Conversion would con him more Pains than he at first imagined. My Mo ther feeing that the Place in which we were, wa nor proper for our Discourse, caused us to enter little Summer-heuse, in which were Seats, and a Table of Slate: She placed her self on the one side with the Jesuite and my Brother, and I on the other This was the Order of our firting in this famous Conference.

My Mother, as soon as we were settled in our hid Places, addressed her self to the Jesuite; Father Hard side set to him, here's my Son, whom I bring to you, as a sick Man to the Physician, for the recovery of his Health. I believe (said my Brother) of the am not sick in mind, and as for my Body, I am as you see, by the Grace of God very well. There

ne Do he Nei be !

ick

d

aic eig ca enf hie noi 15 116,

hic I pir he bu 5 A

or contagious than Herefie, which intirely infects the best Spirits, and hurries them into Damnation. I understand your meaning, said my Brother; you would prove that I am fallen into this horrible sickness of the Soul, viz. Herefie, and would have me believe that you are able to deliver me from it, by bringing me over to your Party. As for the sorter, I can't see how you date call me Herefick; Do I believe any thing that is not conformable to the Holy Scripture, or that is Condemned by it? Neither I nor any other of the Resormed could ever be Convicted of this.

You must not think (said the Father) that Hereicks are only such whose Sentiments are Condemned by the Scripture, but also such as sorsake the saith of the Church; for the Church is the Soveeign Judge of Hereticks, and the Scripture is a lead thing which Hereticks wrest, giving it what the helt agrees with their own Fancy, and out of which they sometimes take Pillars to support their nost permicious Opinions. But as for the Church, is living, it makes Orders and explains them here is, and whoever departs from the Foundations which she hath laid, is an Heretick, and out of the said said who of Salvation.

I see Father, said my Brother, that you are of the pinion of all Roman Catholick Doctors, and that he Holy Scripture not being savourable to you, ou will not accept of it as a Judge, but will ravish a Authority from ir, to give it to your Traditions, hich after all are nothing else but Mens Inventions.

Hereupon the Jesuite made a long Discourse of raditions, and the unwritten Word; he endeavourd to prove that the Scripture was not perfect, and this end quoted the Scripture against it self; Jesurought many Minacles which are not written in this lok; and again, There are many things which Jesus

did, which bad they been all Written, I Juppofe the World it felf could not contain the Books that should be written: Hence he palled to the Ciration of the Ancient Do Aors of the Church, as Tertakian, Cyprian, Hieron, and divers others: He proceeded to far as to far, that the Church was above the Scripture, whole Books are only Authentick, faid he, because she had declared them to; from whence he came to draw this Conclusion from the Principle he had laid down, That if the Church had Power to Authorize 2 Doctrine, to diffinguish it from what is Apocry phal or Profane, and to give it all its Force and Ver tue, much more hath she a right to interpret it, and therefore there needs no other Interpretation of the Scripture than what is found in the Charch. The Father urged fo many Arguments to prove what h faid, that I cannot remember them, but as for m Brothers Answer, which I heard with a great de of Pleasure, and which he asterwards gave me in Ma nuscript, so that I often read it, I have it now almo by heart.

Father, faid he to the Jesuite, you have spoke as much as you please, nor have I at all interrupte you in your Discourse; I now beg the same Libert I protest (faid he) against all the things that we have faid, and maintain that those Holy Booling which the Word of God is written, are the four dations of Salvation; and the Church ought to dre all its Instructions out of this Fountain, as having themselves and of themselves sufficient Authority decide all Differences and Controversies. I shall so more, that the Scripture carries with it its fole at true Interpretation, which 'tis not lawful to feek a where elfe : This, Father, I intend to prove by A fay thority, History and Reason, after which you me

draw what Conclusion you please.

God himself speaks thus in Deuteronomy : You for add nothing to the Word that I have Commanded

ist

ace

ich

c 1

d a

eve

1 11

cir

fin

od,

ngle

boc

he

hy:

Go

C

sfr

rns

tion

oph

142 17.

fro

ari

t or

s in

Red. ord

God

d mi

4 b

n)

athe

th,

at ?

ater

other s did ither hall you take away any thing from it : All that I ace Commanded you, you hall observe to do it; you hall Wher add nor take away any thing. Certainly thefe e terrible Words, and hath not your Church aftagainst them? the Doctors of the Church of Rome we just Cause to hang their Heads and to be coverwith shame and confusion, when they see that cir Predecessors had added not only one Ista, not fingle Article, but a Third Table to the Law of od, and have composed a fifth Gospel, and for one ngle Paffage have Canonized fuch Books as are pocryphal, and contrary to the Holy Spirit; but let hear how this Divine Spirit expresseth it felf in Sr. in; He whom God fent, declared the Words of God, God gave him not his Spirit by Meafure. And Ic-Christ faith in the same Place, I receive not Wits from Men; which Passage as a Cannon-shot overrns at once all that can be faid in favour of Trations: See also what our Lord saith after Isaiah the opher; This People draweth nigh unto me with their uth, and bonours me with their lips, but their heart is from me: In vain do they worthin me, teaching for Arines the Traditions of Men; which shows, that 'tis t only now that Men endeavour to bring Traditis into the Church, but they have always been refied. I remember that I have read an excellent ord in the Proverbs on this Subject; All the Word God is pure, 'tis a Bucker to all that hope in it; d not to this Word, least the Lord reprove thee, and u be jound a Lyar. And what will you (Gentlen) who are Advocates for Tradition, fay to that athema of St. Paul, who Writing to the Galathians, th, If we or any other Preach any other Gospel than at we have preached, let him be Anathema? Muft fay here that the Doctors of the Church have other Gospel than this great Apostle of the Natis did? 'Tis in vain to pretend that St. Paul Anathemathematizeth such as preach a contrary Gospel, so he only suith, Another Gaspel; that is to say, a different Gospel, as those do who relate Miracles, and id attribe them to Jesus Christ, although we find by them mention at all of them in the Gospels. In fine, & The Peter whom you qualifie with the Title of Prince of every the Apostles, and to whom you pretend the Lor ertu gave a supream Authority, suith, that The Prophis rec gave a tupream Authority, latth, that are propose age came not of old time by the Wil of Man, bit holy men old God spales as they were moved by the Holy Gho?. This ew Father, is express, this is clear and plain, and the fact great Apostle was perswaded that what was proposed by the Holy Spirit, could not be Author about zed by men, as some pretend to give Authority in the Scriptures, by their Glosses and Approximately tions.

'Tis notoriously evident, that the Apostle new or D believed, that 'twas lawful for men, how many, he to a Learned and Wife foever they were, to add to at Scripture; and certainly, if the Doctors have the Priviledge, the Apostles who were the Basis an Pillars of the Church, had a far better pretence ir; yet they never claimed it, but look't on fuchs Attempt as both impious and facrilegious. Ho guilty then are such, who coming after the An Itles, and having neither the Dignity nor the Ma grebi fure of the Spirit which the Apostles had, haven made bold to carry their follies into the Sandur and joyn humane Imaginations to the Holy Word God! There's no Man in the World who is able keep Servants, that will fuffer them to add to, take from his Commands as they please; and yets rueti thinks you would have us believe that God didn well mind all that he ought to have faid for our & which he afterwards left to Mens good Intention f, in Is this, Father, to be suffered? The Holy Spi will Caith, that All the Wildom of Man is but folly be

11 :

Th

llen

our

othir

Der 5 x 1

his :

ne I

Ford

Stion

mfir

ems fuffers this humane Wisdom to interpret and Id Traditions to his Word, and to judge sove-

univ of it.

There are no Doffors in the World, how Learned ever they are, that can show a reason for all the riumes, Sacrifices, and Purifications, which are at rge expressed in the Ceremonial Law, and yet cle are but the finallest matters : How then can e who are utterly in the dark a out the least things hich God hath commanded, prefume to dispose thefe that are the greatest? For the Roman Church pliffed thefe Traditions only to enlarge her Pow-, and to establish what the pleased; for having otten this Point, the built an Infinity of things upon : for the disposeth of the Habitations of fouls afr Death, puts a price upon their Punishments, ts Salvation to fale, and offers Paradice to him at bids most for it; and all this, because foroth it pleaseth us, and we have thus invented we must have the Holy Scriptures, spite of them, onfirm and ratifie.

The Disproportion between the sublimity and excellency of the Holy Scriptures, and the weakness four understandings, is so great, that we can find othing in the World to parallel it: Canst thou by probing find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty periction? It is higher than Heaven, what canst has so specified it is deeper than Hell, what canst thou do? his is speken in the Book of Job, concerning Dine Providence; L may say the same thing of the Yord of God, which we ought not to pretend to

tuetrate, much less to judge of ir.

I have often been aftenished at that Impuence and Blasphemy, which our Enemies are guilty so in saving that the Word of God is not perfect will only produce two Examples to show its persistion, the one taken from the Law of Rigour, the other

e K

e l' n ing

me un

Te

old

Ge

tt

L

vei

nus

old

30

lov th

Th

al

th

a ad

ne.

the

c t

fay

le

tre

ich

t t

H

c a

mi

other from the Law of Grace. The first aren id 5. Ten Commandments contained in two Table e his the second is the Lords Prayer, contained in fix a e P ticles. What Man amongst all the Church of Modurst proteind to authorize this? For we plainly that God alone could be the Author of fuch a wo and that were all the Legislators of the World to ther, they could never have composed a law, or fifting only of Ten words, and comprehending all t fins of the World. And all the Doctors of the U verse together could never have composed a Pra er, in which in fix Articles are contained all theD fires that can enter into a reasonable Soul; and w ever heard that the greater received his Author from the less?

I know you'l plead that the Church is inspired the Spirit of God, and therefore may judge wh Books are Canonical, and what are not: But Fathe that which you call the Church is not always a mated with the Divine Spirit; and though it we yer this would not prove her Power of judgingt Holy Scriptures foveraignly, fo as that there show be no Appeal from her Judgment; the Spirit not given her for this end, but that the may w reverence submit her self to them. The Spirit given her properly to prevent private persons fro judging whether a book be Authentick or no, i in this case we must submit to the Judgment of Church, who distinguisheth the Books that wered Clared by the Spirit of God from those which me would add to them, which are called Apocryph and which the rejects. This is all the Author which the Church can have; nor must we asen to her a power of adding to the Scriptures, but of ly of teaching the People which are Canonical a which are not : And this Authority is much the far with that of our Parliaments, who receive the La ters-Parents of his Majeffy, and know his figni

d Scals; they publish them abroad to be really e Kings Letters, and they declare their contents to e People. But they do not compose them, they not fign or seal them, they dare not add any ing to them, whether contrary or different: But me men do that with respect to God, which no juncil durst do to its Prince.

Tell me, Father, cannot Goldsmiths distinguished from Copper? yet they cannot make Gold to Gold, for his so already of its own Nature, withthe their assistance. They may indeed mix Siver Lead with Gold, but they can never make this ver to become true Gold, because mixed with ithus the Church may indeed know what is the true old, the real Word of God, and what is not; but cannot make a new Word of God: Men may o compose Writings, and have Impudence enough add them to the Word of God; yet it doth not low that by so doing they give them the Charester the Word of God.

They preach amongst you, Father, with a great al of earnestness, that the Church gives Authority the Scriptures, and consequently that she must above them, fo as to have Power to add her aditions to the facred Writings: But when all's ne, the Church hath only Authority to declare the People, that what is called the Holy Scripe is indeed the Word of God: for as Gold would cease to be Gold, though there should be none say this is Gold, so the Holy Scripture would not ife to be the Word of God, and Authentick, tho tre were no Church to tell men, that this Word ich you read is the Word of God. Moreover I fay, t the Canon of the Holy Scripture being owned d declared in the first Councils, we ought withcany hesitation or difficulty to receive their deminations; nor are we to question in the Church Authority of the Holy Scripture, but to submit Our selves to its Decrees, which are Truth and Righ Tis t

teousness its sets.

Indeed Father, if the Church hath Power is aw judge sovereignly of the Doctrine contained in the tions Holy Scriptures, it must be supposed that in the And Church there are, and always will be men that are a red of sull of the Holy Ghoit as those that wrote these succeed Books, which is utterly saise; for the weakness were blindness, ignorance and malice of those that oppose comit the Holy Springer. the Holy Scripture, thous that they have not the laid least spark of that Divine Spirit: So that it below the not to men to judge of the Doctrine, or to inter pret what is contained in those Hol. Books. If vo fay, that such as have received the Holy Spirit me do it: I answer, that all those that have receive the Holy Spirit in these latter times, show it by su mitting themselves humbly to the Word of God.

his

12016

but

ins

Ahis

old

6 2

nab

rin

ora

OG ur

id

1

ing

cal

DIE

dira

nce

nın

.0,

iin,

. 11

ber

But Father, I have other Arguments of greate force than those already urged; what likelihood there that men who know themselves too weak tob faved, should yet have Power togive Authority to the Books in which are contained the means of the Salvation? hath God who is jealous of his own Glor given Men his Word to be abandoned to their Di cretion, to be controuled and contested, and to ha what they please added to it? Is it possible, or is lawful, that fuch as are ignorant should judges Knowledge? Is it proper for those that are bor blind to discourse of the principles of Light? would not every Body laugh at them should they attend it? Much more ridiculous is it for fuch as are blin and ignorant, to present to judge of the Heaven light, and of the sublimest of all sciences.

Is it not certain Hather, that under the Old To flament, God spake once to his People, but 'twaso Iv to give them his Law; fo that this Law being on given, 'twas not left to the People to add new Pois to it, but they were obliged to yield obedience to

Tis true, the Levites preached this Law to the Peoo'c, but how did they do it? they confulred the aw it felf to explain it, without feeking Interpretations in their own Brains, as they do amongst you. And although this unbelieving Nation was often affued of the truth of Gods Promifes, and God had to his End fent them many great Prophers, which were his Embaffadors to bring them word of the coming of the Meliab, vet there was never one that and to the People, In this or that more than the Law eribes : became in it felf it is no fufficient Remedy : But his was what they faid ; Keep the Law and the Ordisames mich the God of your Fathers gave to Meles his Thefe great Men were all extraordinarily appred, ver they never undertook to contest the 45 of God, nor to forge any new Commandments ; but they preffed Obedience to the law only. his to antiver those that say, that the same Spirit which spake by the mouths of those that spake, and orded the hands of those that wrote, doth now alanimate the Doctors of the Catholick Church, nabling them to pals a right Judgment on the Dotrine of the Faith contained in the Holy Scripture; premethinks they owe the same respect to the Word of God which the Prophers showed it, who never urd touch a thing to facred, nor ever prefuned to

Id any thing new to it.

I may fay the fame thing of the Gospel; God having spoken by his Embassadors, and by them revealed his Will to the People, hath withdrawn his part of Reveation as well as the Power of working stracles, and bath lett us only the Spirit of Obedince: For God knew the wicked Disposition of sun too well, to leave him the liberty of diminishing, adding, or changing what he pleased. This cerain, that though there are many Herefees in the hold, there would be infinitely more if men had berty to give Authority to the Scripture, steing

they now have falfifyed it, corrupted it, and mad fuch Gloffes on it as are contradictory to the Text.

'Tis true Father, the old Church of the Fews ha a Tradition; Eleazar, Phineas, and all those wh had been Eye-witnesses of the wonders which Go had wrought by the hand of Mojes, informed the Children of them; and these things were hande down from Father to Son, in those Families the kept the true Worship of God : But this Tradition had nothing new in it, nothing more than was co tained in the Law and the written Word of God: we va the Traditions of the Church of Rome of the fan Nature with respect to the Gospel, they would m have been fo much difliked as now they are; ye as men cannot long handle any thing without foul it, the Jews abused this Tradition of their Father and a ided to it their own Inventions: So that 'two extreamly corrupted in the time of our Lord left Chrift, for which we find that he often blames the in the Gospel.

The Catholick Dodors do in my mind exactly in tate the Ancient Rabbins, Scribes, Pharifees, a lewish Dostors; and as they boasted that they so ved God, not meerly according to what God h ordained in his Law, which they judged too light a matter, and too cafie a means to be faved, an had attained that pirch of Presumption, that the thought it the greatest perfection to obey God a cording to their Traditions; so according to the Do fors of the Church of Rant, 'tis a small man to embrace the Gospel, in which many materia things were omitted which they have added, as thereby rendred that work compleat, which & Paul, S. Peter, and all the other Apostles, se Christ himself left imperfect. What Impious abiu dity is it, to cry down the Holy Scripture, and pro claim it imperfect, only to give the greater reputat

on to Tradition: !

M

the

m

e li

by uft

atho ill a

lect

oon

er

Sp

vil IS TO

ond

e c

re i die

c, a

t to The

Th 1

ach th

rir

mail

, I

er i

niw

be

u l for

DWI

Di

had

nd.

WC

My Brother intended not to have ended fo foon, hough the Father would often have interrupted m : But my Mother, who could no longer diffeme her displeasure against my Brother, discovered by crying out, Must you have all the Discourse? uft no Body speak but you? No Madam, (faid ather Mathew) let him fay what he pleafeth, we ill answer him afterwards: For my part I seemed leep during all, this Conference, which lasted from oon 'till near four of the Clock, in which my Moer was very well pleased, fearing least I should ve been taken with my Brother's Discourse; and speak ingenuously, I never in all my life heard y thing that pleased me better, which (methought) is too learned for my Brother; but I do not much under at it, when I confider his love to Learning, e excellency and vivacity of his Parts, and the re my Father took to get them improved. Thus, dies, if I feem more learned than Virgins usually e, afcribe to the Happiness of my Memory, and t to the strength of my Judgment.

The Father believing thereby the better to accom-

th his defign on my Brother, told my Mother, that would fain discourse with him in private : As ich as you please, said my Brother, and thereupthey both arose, and spent two large hours in ir Conference. In the mean time my Mother naining in the Summer-house with me, said to , Ist possible Justine (said she) that you should ir nothing of the Conference? A little, Madam, nswered I) of the Beginning, but I defire no more be present arit, because 'tis rone of my Bufiness. u have no reason (answered she) to speak ill of for methinks you have flept well enough as it. ow not what to think of your Brother, (added the) Discourte doth not accord well with the hopes had given me; befides, your Father hath, in my nd, made him fludy fo hard, as though he intended tended him for a Minister. Mother, answered Lac finding, my Brother is too good a Souldier to be I be Minister, but Learning doth no injury to any bevery

Women, whose brains it hurts.

I endeavoured by Discourses of this Nature with allay my Mothers displeasure against my Brother, I cont reason of his freedom of speech, but the return cont the Jesuit spoiled all, who drew my Mother and I and discoursed with her for near half an hour. I may the mean time my Brother gave me an account of the my S private Discourse he had had with the Jesuit, which he concluded, faying, We shall have a fine ran or the by and by. Nor indeed was he mistaken, for a corr Mother having conducted the Jeiuit to the Gate ad our house, returned immediately to us, with a Consave tenance that belyake Fury. Her face was fuccessi ly red and pale. I trembled to fee her in this h flure, but her words much increased my dister from ture. Let us go into the house, Justine (said a eath and I forbid you ever more to discourse with you I the affle Brother; and I forbid you, Findinand, ever to con into my Pretence as long as I live; you have unit pily deceived me, and this is the least punishme his that your treachery against me deserveth.

Though these were very bloody reproaches, my Brother feem'd not much furprized at the but without answering a word, respectfully reme The same Evening he lodged at a Farm, which's longed to my Father, about a League from us, a spent most of the next day in Hunting, not rem ing to our Caffle 'till the Evening, to play a Sun

gem which had good Succeis.

My Mother when the first brush of her Anger over, began to be troubled for her Emportmen for the Affection the had for her Son was to fire that it foon got the Victory-over all other Paffe Do you know, faid she, what your Brother dos he went hence on Horfe-back, with a Servant and

Lacou

0.01

135

ut fl hat l

e ha

nam

ben, path!

r th

take

ive c

e, I

ow I do ?

> id I wn

nom ell M Lacquey, and they have taken the Dogs with them, I believe he intends to hunt in the Countrey. 'Fis very well, (faid the) feeming to be much better pleased than indeed the was. We supped together without saying any thing one to another, only she continually sighed, and for my part, my head was

continually working on variety of subjects.

I spent this Night in a great deal of Trouble. You may eafily imagine that twas impossible for one of ny Sex, who had entertained fo great a Defign, that as like to have such troublesome Consequences, or to be very much aftonished, when I law my self eprived of all that was my support. My Mother ad her disquietudes as well as I; she would fain ave had my Brother make application to her first. ut the had forced him away, and 'twas not likely hat he would expose himself to the danger of a new front, and the judged it a condescention much beeath her to feek after him; the continued in Pain I the day. As for my Brother he returned to our affle in the Evening, with his Servant, and in lead coming into the Dining Room, went immediately his own Chamber. My Mother fent me thicher as e had done the day before, I found him in his namber with his Servant, his Boxes and Males all en, his Linnen and Cloaths taken out, and he pathing himself as though he designed immediately r the Army, whilst his Servant assisted with a equey, was packing up such things as he intended take with him. Well, faid he, as foon as he faw e, I was troubled to think how I should take my we of you, but now you are here 'tis well enough. ow Brother, (said I hastily) what do you intend do? you'l fee that (replyed he) by and by. Ah id I) will you leave us? And immediately I went wn to carry the News to my Mother, towards om I never fail d of respect in all my Life till now. ell Mother, (faid I to her) you now see the Essect of TOUT

him

on

ill r

s for

ich

ave

hav

hich

n, f

d it

e or

e la

No.

at she

1 ? Y

to h

ore t

eari

(cra)

y rec

ig sa

s not

rofo

o the

ing

ief, t

at fha

Mot

a litt

We

your Passion, my Brothers going, what will you say who charged you to keep him with you till his re-turn? You have broken the Promife you made my Father, never to extort his Son to change his Religion, which when you could not prevail on him to byo do, you have cruelly driven him from your Presence you Ah my Father hath far more religiously kept his Pre- onic mile, for he never spake to me of his Religion, or mine.

My Mother, whill I uttered these reproaches feemed rather dead than alive. I should have spoken more bitterly, but the was not in a Capaciay of hearing them. Immediately fome came to call me telling me, that my Brother defired to speak with me. At my return I found his Servant that carrie his Maile and Pistols, just about to mount his Horse Friend, (faid I) don't make fo much hafte, ftop it I have spoken with your Master. Do what I bid vo cryed my Brother to his Servant in a feeming Pall on : Hereupon I went up into his Chamber, an found him accourred for his Journey, and thath only staid to speak with me. What do you me Brother (faid I) by this Emportment? are you to folved to leave us? he persivaded to change you Mind, I'll make your Peace with my Mother; 10 brag of more than you are able to perform (faid a Brother) with a kind of imparience, I know my M ther too well to hope for fo fudden a Change. Yo know Sifter, that I gave her no provocation to fper what the harh faid to me, or to treat me as the ha done : But Sifter, you fee 'tis late, I pray God ! bless you; (added he, embracing me) and not be able to speak a word more, he shook me off for him, who could not hold him, and immediately k the Chamber. My Mother who heard him, call him, Ferdinard faid the, come hither to me. I presently obeyed her, and my Mother looking

him, In what Equipage is it that I fee you (faid fhe?) shither are you going ? I am going fo far (answerdhe) that you'l have no reason to fear my coming gain into your prefence, or that you'l ever more ave your Eyes offended with a fight that's odious o you, though I have not deserved to be so. Dare ou then (laid fhe) go away without your Fathers onient. My Father (answered he) will easily paron me when he knows what moved me to it, and ill readily give his Confent that I leave thefe Parts ; s for yours, you have given it already, and that in sch a manner as pierceth my very Soul, for you ave driven me from your presence with reproaches. have therefore nothing more to do in this Caftle, hich will henceforth be more dreadful than a Prin, seeing I have lost the Assection of my Mother, ad it may be the love of my Sister. If you'l grane, e one Favour, give me leave to kifs your hand, 'ris e last I shall ever ask of you.

No, faid my Mother, pretending very unfeafonably at the was much more displeased than indeed the was. h Mother (said he) do you refuse me so small a matto his Holy Protection, and to inspire you with ore tender sentiments for my Sifter; but I dare ear it will not be thus, and that she will live very scrably with you: Yet Mother, Heaven will one y require of you an account of your Children: Ha-ig faid this, he embraced me a fecond time, who s not able to speak one word, and having made refound reverence, he withdrew and went down o the Court. 'Twas then that my Mother, who ing on a large Chair, abandoned her self to her ief, being able to fay nothing but O my God, at shall I do? You are (said I) one of the happi-Mothers that live, in having such a Son, and are a little time like to become the most miserable wetched. You know Mother, that you have

D 2

TOP

not done well, why should you refuse him that some Favour of Kiffing your Hand? At any other time durft not have spoken so freely, but I was now red ced to that pass, that I did but little value my Me thers Anger. I did not flay for any Answer, b ran down into the Court, to use my last Endeavo to ftop my Brother: My Mother arose hastily our her Chair to the Window, where the faw my Br ther on Horse-back, fitting his Stirrops, and ene out to the Servants, Shut the Gates, hinder hi My Brother, as though he had m from going. heard my Mother, faid with a menacing Voice, if a one dares to oppose my Passage, I'll trample him w der my Hories Feet. By this time I was come in the Court, and laying hold on the Bridle, It shall me then (faid 1) that you shall thus deal with, is ing I am resolved never to let go my hold. Has Sifter, my dear Sifter, faid he, shedding some Tea Let these Tears suffice you; Judge you whether can possibly remain in this Castle. In the meaning my Mother came do in into the Court her felf, h Face covered with Tears, forgetting all her Refe ments; Are you not very unnatural, Ferdinand, a the, to leave me for a Word I spake to you in Paffion? God's my Wirness (faid he) that I la you with the greatest regret in the World; but M ther, you have very unjustly driven me away only speaking according to my Conscience.

'Twas on this delicate Point that this agreed Narrative was Interrupted by the Master of the Sh who obliged us to go to Supper; for these son Men do not abound with Complaitante. We want for the next Morning with a great deal of Impatien but the Consideration we had for Madamoight de-

Phale, made us vanquish our Cuciosity.

CHA

left

0: 1

ould

ent

evin

iled

im,

47 V

etrav

e 10

tho

nd it

I se

nfior

arcw

and,

ve a

to th

reh

oine i

11 1

our la

You

ou ha

d h

apt of edewer thous on r.

CHAP. III.

The next Morning, as foon as Madamoiselle de St.

Phale, and the rest of our Company were met gether, the continued her Hiftory in this manner. left off last Night at the Answer which my Brother trurned my Mother. If you, continued he, would or have had me answer the Father Mathem, you ould have rold me fo, and then I would have been ent; bur vou gave me liberty to speak freely, beeving that he would cafily flop my Mouth, but he iled of this, and I made good my Ground against im, and this is all my Crime. 'Tis only for this at you reproach me with having deceived you, and etrayed you; 'tis for this, that you have forbidden e your Presence, and all Discourte with my Sister, though I were the greatest Criminal in the World. nd indeed, Mother, 'tis for ever that I leave you, at I leave this Land, that I renounce all my Prensions in France, of which I now take an eternal arewell. Grant me only the Favour of killing your and, which I cannot forbear to begg, though you we already refused it me. My Mother fell not now to the fault she had committed before, but held rth her hand, faying, My Son, you have overome me; May not the who hath driven you away, Il you bick? Is it not possible for me to fosten our hard Heart? Intend you to feek a Reparation your flonour on her that bare you, or would ou have her begg your Pardon on her Knees? She d hard'y finished these words before my Brother apt off his Horfe, cast him felf ar my Mothers Feet, dewed them with his Tears, and embraced them, ithout being able to fay any thing; but my Mother on russed him from the ground, and embraced D 3 him.

him. All those of the Family that were in the Courcould not forbear Weeping any more than we the were immediately concern'd. We thought that the whole business had been at an end, and I who had all the while held the Horse by the Bridle, delivered it to a Servant, commanding him to return it to the Stable: Stop, cryed my Brother; Why so? said my Mother; what means this? I must, answered be either leave this House for ever, or the Father must chasse which of us two you will retain, and which

you will banish.

You urge me roo far, Fadinard, faid my Mother altering both her Voice and Countenance: Infolm that you are, dare you propose that I drive awa my Confestor? you abuse my tenderness and tean but you shall not always abuse them: And I, si my Brother, flould I not leave a Mother that put no difference between a pernicious Jesuite and a O'redient Son? Ah! I have staid too long in the House, faid he, as he remounted his Horse. Fu my part, I despaired of any agreement, when I la how my Mother dealt with him, and therefore I le go my hold in the Bridle. Go Brother, faid I, you rejentment is just, be gone from the Place when you are so un worthily treated, for my part I'le m be long behind you, I'le foon be in a Convent. N Sifter. (laid he) do you flay to be a Comfort ! my Father; It may be my Mother becoming feet ble of her fault, will not deal with the Daughters The hath dealt with the Son. Farewell my Friends faid he to the Waiting-Gentlewomen, and Serving Men and Maids, and Lacqueys, who all fell on the Knees before the Horse, and made so lamentable cry, that I never heard any like it; for my Brothe was very well beloved. Be gone, Children, (faidhe I should be forry to hurt you now, having never dos you ought but good; my Horse may chance to it jure some of you. Be gone, (laid I in a Passion

wh do Co Da res

tur

MO

ed.

fte

11

SOL

Pai

do

me

Son adwh wh win My and in fel

whim far me ple Fa asi it the

to the Vo

would you have my Brother stay to be daily affronted, whilst a damnable Jesuite is here absolute Master?

When I spake these Words, my Mother earnestly lookt upon me with Eyes that discovered that her Soul was divided between two contrary and violent Paffions. She called me to her, and I, though I doubted not but that the would deal feverely with me, yet went to her. Juline, (faid the) I Pardon what you have faid, but Counfel me, What shall I do? I do not hefirate between your Brother and the Confessor, as though I knew not which to chuse, but Daughter, I know no Confessor alive can better direct me in the way of Salvation than this Father can: On the other fide the Voice of Conscience and Nature make me most cruel Reproaches for suffering my Son to depart for fo flight a matter. I will not advise you Mother, (faid I) but if you please I'le whisper my Brother what you fay, it may be it may win upon him. Do (faid the) what you think fir. My Brother came the fecond time off his Horse, and went to my Mother, and discoursed with her in private, none being admitted to hear it but my felf.

You know Son (faid the) how delicate I am in what regards Conscience, you would have me to banish immediately either my Confessor or you: I would fain keep you both : But, Ferdinand, you will have me declare my Resolution: The Voice of Nature pleads for you, and the Voice of Conscience for the Father. Advise me what to do, Ferdinand; I have asked your Sifters Advice, but the refuleth to give it me; speak to me as a difinteressed Person, as though you were not concern'd, and speak rather as a Friend than as a Son. Mother, replyed he, to conform my self ro your Will, I shall tell you, that in the general his better to hear and obey the Voice of Conscience than that of Nature; but as it often D 4

lm

D-c

Par

of i

the

No

sh

tur

ind

the

Ka

he

er er

often happens that Conscience is guided by preisdide rather than Justice, so this often more sale to hear the Voice of Nature than that of Conscience.

To come to the Father Matter, you would rema him because he seems necessary for the Direction of your Conscience. Certainly the Condition of Mon must be very miserable, when they believe that their Salvation depends on the Will of certain men and on the Careffes that they make them. There are feme tick People over whose Spirits-their Phys firians have gorren such an absolute Empire, that they believe their life or Death lves in their hands We may just'y term such Physicians as these the Tu rants of the Sick, as we may most Confesiors the Tr. rants of the Confcience. The Father Mathew is one of these, he hath got the ascendant of your mind, to that you receive his favings as fo many Oracle and you are afraid of falling out with him, because you imagine him to be God's great Friend and Favourite.

But Mother, (continued he) if you will give me leave to speak, your Conscience ought not to be entangled for a man who himfelf hath no Conscience a ail. For besides that be is a Jesuite, which ven word contains a multitude of mischiefs: Was it not he that suggested part of what you said to me, and advised you to banish me your Presence? To sow Discord between a Mother and her Son is the true Work of the Devil; to that Mother, you will find, that your Conscience, if you will Consult it as you ought, will exhort you to rid your Hands of 6 dangerous a Person: And if you'll be advised by me, take for a Confessor one that is no Jesuite, for these Gentlemen are never fatisfied 'till they have imposed an intollerable Yoke on Mens Confciences, which is all the good Fruit of your Auricular Confessions; because knowing all that a Person doth or thinks, 'the cafie

eifie for them to turn him to their Pleafure, and to

Importe on him what burdens they think fit.

Whether my Mother was really convinced by my Brothers Arguments, or only seemed to be so, is uncertain; yet she promised my Brother to turn off the Father Mithem, and at the same time sent to him to acquaint him with this Resolution. In the main time we returned to the House, where as soon as my Brother had pluckt off his Boots, he came to us; my Mother who knew no bounds either of Hatter or Love, carelled my Brother at such a rate as in exceeded his Expectations: And as for you, 3 my said sine to me, I remember allest at you have sind, and methinks you ought rather to have taken Part with your Mother than with your Brother; but I had son you for his sake.

During all the Supper my Brother enterrain'd my Mother with Discourse concerning the Mischiefs wrought by Confessors in Families, Cities and Kingdoms. I must Confest said he, that the Confession of Sins and Infirmities in the Ears of a Priest was and in the Primitive Church, but'twas abolished alm of the aughour all the East by Nectarius, Patriarch of Conflantinoble, because of a Deacon, who hearing the Contestions of a young Widdow, and knowing Infirmities, took occasion thepee to seduce her: Not is there any reason to doubt, but a Woman who discovers all her fins and Passions to a Priest, is in a ready way to be seduced by him. On the other hand, Confessions serve to draw what the Priest will cut of Families for the Building of Religious Houses, and the finging of Masses, and many other things of the like Nature, as also the Prying into the secrets of kags, which the Confessors use for their own adar ige. My Mother was well enough farisfyed of the fruth of what my Brother faid : if you will Moer, added he, follow my Advice, though I are our Son, and of a contiary Religion, Never make.

dil

OV

ft3

of-

bu

tes

Ta

to I d

w!

fe.

D

n

hi

he

th

fic

10

be

bu

th

be

"

la pi

M

m

po

tr

af

th

ca

to

eny Jesait your Confessor more, but content your Jest with the Curar, as many others, who have try-

ed both, have at last done.

Here the Discourse of Mademeiselle de St. Phali was interrupted by the coming of several Gendemen into the Room where the Conversation was held, she not being willing to give an Account of her Life before so many witnesses.

CHAP. IV.

A LL the Company whom Mademoiselle de St. Phate honoured with the History of her Life, being again met, she thus continued her Relation.

My Brothers Discourse had made such Impression on my Mother, that the was almost persuaded to make choice of another Consessor. And had he but pursued his design, he had certainly accomplished it; But Love, which at this time seized on his heart, made him neglect so advantageous an Enterprize, and the Consequence of this Neglect proved very mischievous and fatal, and hath forced me on of France.

My Father having in fifteen days finished his business at Dijon to his latisfaction, wrote us the day of which he resolved to leave that place, and our Castle being but three good days Journeys from it, we expected him on the sourth: But he neither coming then, nor the fisth, nor the fixth, nor the seventh my Mother and I began to be very much concerned and my Brother resolved to ride to seek him. But on the eighth day, my Brother having rode of Early in the Morning, we saw both him and my Father enter the Court about Noon, at which we very much rejoyced; and I leave it to you to judge, whether for my part I had not reason, considering the

dispositions of my Spirit. After our Caresses were over, my Mother desired to know the Cause of his flay. He told her that at Lifon he had met with one of his old Acquaintance in the Army, who living but a fliore days journey from Dijon, and being better acquainted with the ways than I were, faid my Father, undertook to be my Guide, and in one day we came to his Caffle, and he earneffly preffed me to lodge there, which at length with some regrett I conjented to : He seeing that I were so mewhat unwilling to flay with him, faid, I'le shew you somewhat that you have feen before, and which you will not be troubled to see again. The Castle was well feated, adorn'd and furnished, so that I was much pleased at the fight of it. This is not, said Monsieur De Reche Blanche, (for fo was this Gentleman named) what I intend to show you; and being informed that his Wife was in the Garden, and defiring to furprize her before the had any notice of our coming, we went thither together.

We found her in a Walk that had Maples on both fides of it, with her Sop, and three of her Daughters. I confess I was much surprized to see her so fresh and beautiful, having Children which were, marriageable, but much more when I faw fomewhat in her Face, that I feem'd, I had feen before. For her part, the beheld me with the same attention; and it may be with the fame furprize. Monfieur de Roche Blanche, laught heartily to fee us viewing each other with a profound filence, which at length my Father broke : Monficur de Roche Blanche, faid he, had reason to promile me to show me that which I should never tepent having feen. The Lady answered that Gallantry with a great deal of Civility, and her Husband, after having sufficiently entangled both of them by this Interview, and diverted himself, resolved to tell each of them, who the other was. Ah Sir, faid he to my Father, is it possible that you have forgotten MademoiMademoifelle de Graffans, and you Madam, Monsieur De Ponsins, (which was my Fathers Name in his Youth, and my Brothers alto, which he left but eight or nine months since, to take that of Ombreval.) These words awakened both Mademoitelle De Roche Blanche and my Father out of their surprize, so that presently knowing one another, they began to embrace and Compliment each other; but my Father was interrupted by the Civilines of the Son and Daughter of Monsieur De Roche-Blanche.

To explain this Muftery, you must know, that my Father during the Wars in Catalonia, where he pertormed his first feats of Arms, being in his Winter Quarters, fell acquainted with Madamoifelle de Graf. fans, who was then one of the most Eminent Personages of the Religion in all Guyenne, and who, not to speak of her great Estate, had without difpute a perfect Deauty, with other wonderful Qualities above her Sex. My Father loved her, andit may be his Love would have been accepted if the Lady had not disposed of her Heart before to a Man of great merit. Yet the full retained a great deal & Esteem and Friendship for my Father; which length of time could not deftroy, as the had often told her husband, who knowing how acceptable it would be to her, brought my Father to his house, to renew this Ancient Friendship. For although Mounsier de Roche-Blanche was of Poison, yet he came to live in Bargundy, because of a great Estate which his Unck had left him, who made him his Heir. And the reason why my Father and he were not acquainted, as Gentlemen use to be, especially when they ared one Religion, was because they tiley had both chan-

My Father was nobly entertained in this house four days, nor was this Journey without any effect, for he was so much taken with the Son and Daughter of Mounsier de Rache-Blanche, that he resolved on some

what

Ju

11

vii

1. 11

11 1

My

rh

chia

Sert

c R

cra

df

10.1

ad

N

hels

me

v d

111

e re

e ac

Ag

S P

our

ve

en

e i

br

agr

adi

on

pec

b H

eni

ar in their favour, which ver he did not declare, quie he expected to fee them at his own house: r Marfer de Roche-Elanche resolved in a shore time vitit a Kiniwoman, whose Lands were but two mus from ours, and to carry his Son and Daughter of him, and at their return promifed to be with us. My Brother, in a fhort time was more in favour th my Mother than ever, and was full urging her change her Confessor. I had also now much more perty than before, for I fpent whole days in my Faes Closet, who fully perswaded me to renounce e Romifi Superititions, in which he proved unancrably there was the greatest Folly and Impiety; I feeing that I delighted much in reading, would reagive me the Key of his Closer, where I used to ad whele days together, in the Books of Martyrs, Mother thinking all the while that I played at hels with my Father and Brother, which indeed I merimes did. The Book of Martyrs fixed me in defign of embracing the reformed Religion.

My Father perceiving me very earnest one day in e reading of this Book, faid to me, You may there admirable Examples of Conflancy, nor only in Men Age and Resolution, but God hath also persected. s Praise in the weakness of Women and Children. oung Virgins, such as you now are, who it may be we been more tenderly educated than you have en, and of higher Quality, have joyfully endured e most cruel Deaths; neither the heat of Flames or the sharpness of Swords could overcome the agnanimity of their Hearts: Would you, were you lled to it, be as conftant as those Young worthy adies were? Father, answered I, I confess I look on Death as somewhat most dreadful and horrible, pecially a Death in the midft of Flames; and there's Heart fo Generous, or Spirit Philosophical, but ust needs tremble at the thoughts of such a Punishent: 'Twas not therefore by their own ffrength that these young Virgins conquered Death and all horrours, but by the Assistance of the Holy Spin so that Father, said I, how weak and searful for I am, yet I sirmly trust in our Lord, that if he cells to such fusterings, heel give me strength to overcost them all. Yes, my Daughter, answered he, you reply is very good, for we have seen that most leaved Doctors and Balhops have basely fellen, when por Pesants, Women and Children have stood it out. For former presuming too much on themselves, and the own strength, being less to themselves have sale whereas the others trusting only on their Saria have been maintained and strengthened, because the

were built upon a rock.

Tis good, continued he, to be prepared for the m cruel fufferings; for befides that when we are prepare for the greatest evils, we shall find them less, and me tolerable when they are come upon us, than we'm gin'd; we thall also be thereby the better enabled bear these leffer evils, which would appear very go and dreadful if they found us unprepared. I forefee the you will be exposed to great temptations, you will be tacqued on the one hand by the Flatteries, Carellesa Tears of a Mother that loves you, and on the of hand by the Perfecutions of your Relations, Mifere Imprisonment, or Banishment, and it may be Dea it felf, for all these things are the Lot of new Co You will leave those Crosses of Gold, Silve Wood and Stone which you now adore, to bear; true Cross of the Lord, the Afflittions and Reproad es of this World. I hope, faid I, that God w hath wrought in me this Holy Defire, will not les his work imperfed, but will carry it on to his Gla and my Salvation. This was all the Conversation had at that time, only my Father told me, that wisht that he could discourse with me again abo these things, but added, that he could not be able do it so soon as he defired; for, said he, I am co

One d M
y Er
d;
ig o
pride
em,
s;
o ni

mie

ele la

av 1

hich ith vere or, a ures ere earch oice early dan odge er earch oice early an odge er earch oice early of early of

vha Drig viev sher shar voir fluc fluc

CCEDI

he !

har

ned for your Welfare more ways than one. Hereon I withdrew, without making any reflexion on the last words. The mean while the time passed ay very insensibly, till the day came, which to.

proved very fatal.

One day the Weather being very fair, my Father d Mother went to walk in the Garden, and invited Brother and me to accompany them, which we d; and as my Father and Mother were discourg of some new Knots and Deds to be made in the orden, we not much minding this discourse, left em, and went to walk in some of the shaded Als; and after having talk't of divers things, the heat oving insupportable, we went towards a Summerpule that stood at the lower end of the Garden. nich my Father had been very carefull to adorn th variety of curious Pictures, and in one Frame ere was my Brothers Picture in the habit of a Waror, and mine in that of an Amazon; nor could any Piures be more exactly drawn than these were. ere just about to have entred the house, when we eard two Persons discoursing together, but their pice was unknown to us. Our Curiofity led us to earken, and we immediately heard the voice of a Ian faying, Don't you remember the Painter that odged at our house, that told us he had drawn Mouner de Ponfins, and Madamoiselle de St. Phale, like a Varrior and an Amazon? What say you, Sifter, of hele Eyes, of this Mouth, of the Majestick air of all he Countenance ? If your liberty (answered a most harming voice) be loft by the fight of a Picture, what will become of you when you have seen the Driginal, I believe you'l certainly dye at the first new of it. But observe also the Picture of the Bro-her, which is no less worthy to be taken notice of han that of the Sifter. I believe, answered the mans roice, the Picture of the Brother hath had no less influence on you, than that of the Sifter hath had on rne; and if you dye not at the fight of it, you I leaft be threwdly wounded by it. You are not twife, replyed the other voice, they are both int Garden, and it may be hear allthat we fay, let go hence, leaft they furprize us buffe about tride You should never, answered the Brother, drawn from this lovely Pisture, if I were not sure to fit the Original in the Garden; after which they immediately left the house, and we made as thought

had not heard a word of what paffed.

In the mean time my Brother and I had a gro defire to laugh and railly each other on what we had heard; we went not into the house as we ar field figned, but continued our walk, at length we percei ed at the end of another Ally, a Young Man less ing a Damiel, both very richly clad, and of a mo illustrious Gate and Carriage? this surprizing re counter, though at a confiderable diffance, caule us all four to flop for some time, being under great Attonishment; after which we went forward and the nearer we approached each other, the mor lovely the new Commers appeared to us; at leng my Brother and the Rrange Gentleman doubled the pace, and leaving us both behind them, mer in the midit of the Alley, where admiring each other, thouland Careffes and Civilities paffed between them. In the mean time the Lady and I alone and the more I look'd on her the more beau iful found her; and the alfo confidered me very atter tively, but we were interrupted, the by my Brother and I by hers, who eame to falure us. What w faid by these Gentlemen, was spoken with so mud diforder that we easily perceived it; but for the Ladie part and mine, we accosted each other though will much tenderness and sincerity, yet with more rediness of Spirit.

fer de Haut-Cour, and Madamoifelle de Garifolles his Si

fter

. 1

Ro

rion te l'

at h

Ver'

ow !

2 3 (

101

We

11 11

e fi

1 P:

rrait

100

gun

the

lies

ede

d r

thed

ra

fled

ng r

od

No

the

111

Tur

Lo

180

MITC

CE

1.

ico

er, the Son and Daughter of Mounsier and Madam Roche-Blanche. I shall say nothing of these two etons, but only that Madamoielle de Garisolles is the pe Picture of her Mother, in Feauty, Spirit, and twee. As for the Brother, besides that he is a very at Person, having nothing in his Carriage but what very Noble, and is loved and esteemed by all that ow him; I believe that we shall see him at Hambers; for which reason I shall not give you a more act description of him, and it may be should I do

you may judge me guilty of partiality.

We continued our Walk, without minding the it which was then extream; My Brother, who at e first rencounter was smitten with the most viont Paffion in the World, as he fince confessed, enrain'd himself with Madamoijelle de Garifolles, as refer de Haut-Cour did with me; we had hardly gun a discourse, before a Lacquey came to call us the rest of the Company: I cannot express the Cales which Mounfier and Madam de Roche-Blanche ede me, nor the Civilities that paffed between them d my Erother. My Mother was extreamly rahed at the fight of fuch admirable Persons as Moune de Hant-Cour and his Sifter were ; this latter the fled an hundred times, and spake the most obling things in the World, to which Madamoiselle de visites always replyed like a Person of Spirit, and od sence.

Never was there more joy, or greater Union among the Persons, the Fathers and Mothers laying aside or Gravity, return'd to the old Passimes of their cuth, such as Dancing, Musick and Flays, and by Imulation, which one would have thought contred, but it was not, Mountier de Hast-Cour endeauted to infinuate into my Mothers Favour, and creeded, and my Brother was very much respected Madam de Roche-Blanche, with whom he had much course in private. As for Mounsier de Roche-Blanche

Blanche and my Mother, they were presently grant in Friends, by the knowledge which they had in there fecrets of Nature. Mounfier de Roche-Blanche, worth had been a great Traveller, and had read much; cc., had also a very penetrating Spirit, informed my did ther of many curious Secrets; so that they result As to maintain a correspondence by Letters, to imp their fecrets to each other, and refolve the Doi that might arife about them; My Father also a Madam de Robe-Blate e had many long Converfan together: So that there was none of us but was a employed, and took a great deal of Pleasure be fo.

I shall not give you a particular Account of all Diversions we had for an whole week together, of the Malque that we played, in which Mountie Haut-Cour and his Sifter appeared under the Fig of Apollo and Diana, the first in Cloath of Gold, the latter in Cloath of Silver: My Brother represe ed the God Mars, and I the Goddess of Arts 1 Sciences, for we had those Habits in our house fresh as they were the first day they were ma though that were in the days of Henry the 4th. A my Father whom I had always feen very Grave, I

the first that put us upon these sports.

Yet were not the Hearts of all to filled with joy a hinder my Father, and Madam de Roche-Blanchin contriving fornething in which we can never be too rious, which Madamoifelle de Garifolles and I thus dif vered: Our two Brothers and Lovers, I may well to them fo, one day role very early in the Morning ride a Hunting, fo that we faw them not till ton the Evening. In the mean time my Father interest to regale his Guells in a Grotte which was in Garden, where my Mother with Mountier de Ka Blanche were, whilft his Wife was with my Fat in a green Cabinet on the other fide. Madamoik de Gariodes and I walking by chance near the great ing

cc, illati OUL 0.5 - 15

erin! on I her id p arri т.

> eve Cr V e V m bii. ou v

100

r h bu rou ou' SV nis t elie

well knew that of her Mother. A sudden Cuorty of hearing their Discourse seized us both at and being in a private place we signify listned

dheard my Father speak thus :

As for my Son (faid he) I have no reason to be hatis jed with him; he hath Judgment and Spirit ough, and his Inclinations lead him to Justice and crue, and to confess the Truth. I would fain see a provided for as foon as possible, both because is my only Son, whom I would have married ring my Life : And because I fear least the Relatias of my Wife engage him in a Match I should rapprove of. You know Madam with what Pafon I once loved you, but Divine Providence hath herwife disposed of us, but it may be it will bless d prosper what I am about to propose, ziz. The arriage of my Son with Madamoifelle your Daughr. Your Proposal replyed Madam de Roche-Blanche too advantageous, not to be accepted; and I beeve you will find a great deal of comfort in having er with you. Yes Madam, answered my Father, e Vertues of the Mother shine forth in the Daughr; and this is what hath made me defire her to be my house, and the inseparable Companion of my on. Irmay be, Madam, in these times of Misery bu were at a loss how to find out a suitable Match ther: You are in the right, (answered she) and ou have freed me from a great deal of Care and rouble, the Lord bless our good Intentious; and recupon they struck hands in token of Agreement, hich Madam de Roche-Blanche engaged her Husband ould ratifie: And my Father promifed the like for Wife: And shall we not, faid my Father, discover As to our Children, who are the Parties concern'd? I clieve, answered Madam de Roche-Bianche, they are fore froubled how to get our confent, than they will e to find that we have engaged them without discourng them about it. During During this Discourse, which Madamoiselle described wishles and I distinctly heard, the blush'd extream we which much added to her Beauty, and fixed he full Eyes in the ground, being ashamed to look me in a new heace: But I drew her out of this surprize, by a hers bracing her, saying. My dear Sister let me give to the the first kiss, she also embraced me, but with so we consustion. But the Curiosity we had to hear a utility of the same we had to hear a utility. rest of Madam de Roche-Blanche's Discourse, oblige ur I us to break off our Caresses for the present. us to break off our Careffes for the prefen.

to break off our Careffes for the prefers.
You have made me one Proposal, continued fe Ile now make you another, a bout another Marriag I understand what you mean, (faid my Father and consent to it with all my Heart; 'tis of Monsia ith your Son, with my Daughter; but in this Ensure your we must use a great deal of circumspection. No paughter is, as I have told you, of the Resorm Religion in her Heart, but her Mother is a bigotte west. Roman Catholick; I expect only a favourable of portunity to make my Daughter declare her fe and in this I beg you to help me as need require with your Counsel and Affiftance. The Relations my Wife are powerful, and she is almost Mad in the page. Point of Religion, but it may be we may find mea ut (
to get her Consent. Alrhough you did not engage on
me, replied Midam de Roche-Blanche, by the how
you give me, yet I were obliged to this as a Chi lat v
flian, and ler Midim your Wives Relations be to by powerful, and have as much Authority as they will line they shall find that neither Monstear de Haute-Cour m I will show our selves base in this matter, and her re. they firuck hands again.

Well, my double Siffer, faid Midemoiselle de Gi riffolles to me, we have nothing now where with t reproach each other, and you bluft as well as I; the words were followed with a fecond Embrace, after ng a which we found so strange an Inclination to laug that we were forced to leave the Place we were

eaf TV) po ons hen

off we should be discovered by the noyse. As soon we were gone a considerable distance, and were full Liberty, we had a hundred pleasant discourses n what we heard. In the mean time our two Brohers being returned from Hunting, came to seek us the Garden, where they found us. As soon as we we them, we had much adoe to forbear breaking ut into another laughter, however we conquered ur Inclination for the Present, and promised each ther to discover nothing of what we knew; which romise you may easily guess how well we kept.

My Brother taking Mademoiselle de Garifolles by he have walked into another Alley, and left me ith Museur de Haute-Cour, who looking earnefily ; how happy should I be, if you could commucare to me a little of that Joy that thines in your ves! Ah! Menheur, answered I, I cannot commucare this loy to you only by feeing me: If this were officle, (laid he, interrupting me) I might also mmunicate to you what passeth in my heart, but bu are so happy, and I so miterable, that you canor parrake of my Melancholly, nor I of your Joy. ut (faid I) fince my Joy hath no other Foundaon but a Trifle, it may be your Melancholly is ocfioned by fomewhat of no greater Importance; fo at you have no reason to judge me very happy, or your self very miscrable. I feel (answered he) ine own Misery, and none besides can be sensible its Greanels. Yet (said I) you are jocose, you ng, you dance, you hunt, you perform a thousand easant Actions; your Melancholly must either be ry bashfull, not during to show it felf; or a very sportite, that knows to well to conceal it felf. 'Tis c Crucky of my Fare (faid he) that I must laugh, ng and Dance, whilest my Heart groams under its ons, yet am I not so unhappy now as I shall be, hen I have left this Cafile, In the first Moment

that I saw you, I loved you, and Protested to do Eternally. This is what I was willing to inform you, it being but just that you should know before my departure for the Army, that you are the Person to whom I have given my Heart, and it you shall be the last; for either you must accept my Yows, or the invisible Dangers of the War, we

foon take me out of the World. This Plain Declaration, abated the pleasant H mour that I was in, in an inflant; and I could a for my life prevent discovering it. Is it, answered boldly, is it to Morrifie me that you speak the but affure your self that your Railleries of no me of my good Humour: If, fair I have spoken offend you, I am forry for by bu cannot repeut my having spoken it. I assure you speak with as great sincerity as ever any Heart polleffed of: Do me the favour to believe it, 'in that I ask at present, and if you find one words what I have faid to be false, judge me eternally worthy of your Presence. I loved you as soon ever I faw your Picture, the fight of your admira Berion augmented in my heart a Passion that never be Extinguished, and the Confideration of vo Vertue perfeded what your Beauty had begun.

I had a great mind to feem angry; but the knowledge which I had of the agreement between a Father and Madamoifile de Roche Blanche, the greather and Madamoifile de Roche Blanche, the greather and the excellent qualities of Madamoifile de Garifold and the excellent qualities of Monfieur de Haute-Curdifarmed me in a moment, and left me quite files You'll not speak to me, said he, with a passionate a What would you have me to say? (said I, looks fixedly on him) tince you tell me things so not that I am quite surprized at them: Let it suffix you, that you are the only Man in the World the durst thus speak to me without angring me, the esteem that I have for your Person sorceth me

9

p

So

ers

170

ny

e v

ce '

ter

beir

unt

tho

Br we ged

tur

Br

1.0

at o

a

b so

tou

ha

Hio

Tai

oalle

tem

a

1 M.

r, p

white

r, vo

miel

lv, b

Ma.

de

p within the bounds of Moderation, and were Soul capable of any Paffion, you were him of all ers to whom I would give the preference in my re: But Madamoif lle, faid he, may I hope that ny touch your illustrious Heart, it shall be me ? I e you, faid I, leave to put the most favourable ce you please on my Words, after this ask no far-He would have calt himself at my Feet, the ter to express his thankfulness, but he was afraid being feen in this Posture. Indeed at that very int we perceived those four Persons, to whose thority we were subject, which made us joyn Brother and Madamoisselle de Garissolles; as soon we came together, we viewed each other, and ged we had all been engaged in the same Adture, nor could we hinder our felves from imiling.

Brother who was more airy than Monsieur de 11-Cour: Ah, said he, I imagine why you laugh, at our Cost, but this is not generous. We were about to have replyed, when Monsieur and Manie de Roche-Blanche, my Father and Mother came to us: Though, said my Mosher, the Discourses have together, may possibly give you some satisfien, yet they are but Crude Mears; and hereup-we all walkt into the House.

Never was there more good humour discovered at Table than now, and I may say, that the Parents passed their Children. After all was ended, Mondele their Children. After all was ended, Mondele their Children, who was naturally of a cheartemper, I will, sind he, with Monsear and Made of Ombrevals leave, entertain my self at present his Madampifelle de St. Prodis: Agreed, said my Mondele mondele de Garissolie de Madampifelle de St. Prodis: Agreed, said my Fart, you thus choose your Company, I'le take Managielle de Garissoltes, I know I shall displease some ly, but I cannot help it. There are none left, Madame de Roche-Blanche to my Brother, but we

two, shall I enjoy your Company? I should be, a plyed he, a very degenerate Son, should I not for a fingular Satisfaction in having the Honour of a Po fons Company, for whom my Father hath had for After this Division we all was tender fentiments. ed in an Alley of Maples which encompassed the Gr den, at a sufficient distance from each other, a twas there that Monfeeur de Roche-Blanche discourse me thus.

Madamoifelle, said he, as soon as ever I saw you I could but frame two Wishes, the one is, That yo Frud would abjure the Superstitions of Rome, and the more other is a Wish so rash, and you may judge it selfs I dar that I scarce dare speak it. As for the first will there answered I, it is Sir half accomplished, for I has specified advantageous Sentiments for the Religion who you profess, that I desire to dye in it; and see of a the Hour of Death is uncertain, I desire from the server of the s very moment to enter into your Church: As he your other wish, I can return no answer to it, to cause I know not what it is. I am exceeding gla find he, to hear your good Inclinations, which en boldens me to declare to you the other part of m defire.

My Son, continued he, must want Eyes if he di not observe those Perfections which I see in you, a I should never Pardon him a Fault fo great, as two be to refuse you the homage of his Heart, a Fa of which I believe him uncapable of being guilt And I who am his Father, affure you, that what most passionarely defire in the whole World, is the you would accept of his Vows. Daughter, added for its impossible for me to call you otherwise, w shall always find me a second Monsieur d'Ombres who shall be as tender of you as 'ris possible for hi to be. Whilst he discoursed thus, I perceived the hlushes had seized my Face. Ha Daughter, (fa he, fmiling) pray tell me, whether this blush wha

any i roo l v d

Lice

tent

char

mv

eed

ret

ent

that

were I villin. Broth Roche.

> ream Daugl 141 6 Daug' he is rief ich y d mi

onif E ice n A our

Hee painted on your Face, be favourable to my Intentions or no? You well know Sir, answered I, that I am not at my own disposal, but depend on my Father and Mother, to whose Will I am obliged to yield an entire Obedience. Well Daughter, (replied he) if those on whom you depend, conany repugnance? Ah Sir, answered I, you press me too hard. I Confess my Fault, (said he) I earnesty desire to see you in my House; your Vertue, Prudence and Sweetness have tharmed me much more than your Beauty, Birth and Estate, so that I dare promise you by God's assistance you will find there Pleasure and Peace all your Life. Were it proper for a Eather to boast of his Children, I might tell you that my Son hath all the qualities of a well-born Gentleman, nor would I say so if the Publick did not witness it; and I shall do hat for him for your take, which I would not were he to Marry any other.

I being much entangled by this Discourse, were villing to divert it, and to speak in favour of my Brother. You have no need, said Monsieur de Rocht-Blanche to speak for him; and I am exreamly pleased with the Pathon he liath for my Daughter, and I wish my Son were in as fair a as for the Establishment of his Happiness as my Daughter is; but I have too long pryed into he fecrets of your Heart; but this was not the hef Reason that made me destre to Discourse ith you; but this, Your Father having informd me of your Good Inclinations to reject the on h Errors, I offer you my Person, my House, E late, my Family, and my Son for your affiftice in this matter; make as foon as you can a Abjuration, which cannot but turn much to our Advantage. After this we had much other Counfel. Counsel, for which I was very much obliged to ling, him. At length we joyned the rest of the Com. pany, and immediately after Mounfieur and Madan de Roche-Blanche, my Father and Mother, left us to Discourse among themselves, at which none of all the younger Persons were at all roubled.

I shall not repeat all that passed between us sour, in so nor what Moursser de Haute-Cour said to me but if M must not pass over in silence a Discourse I had in lick, the Evening with my Mother, when every Body soon was retired to their Chambers. Well Justine, said that the, Montieur de Haute-Coar loves you, and without my doubt hath not failed of declaring it to you. My tell y Mother had a mind to try whether I would not Hant Mother had a mind to try whether I would be Hante be moved at so close a Question, but I had the an eday heard things so new both to my Ears and thing Heart, that nothing was capable of putting me difficult out of Countenance. Monsieur de Haute Con (sid I nei I is a Man both Gallant and Handlome, and think thought his Duty to show his Gallantry to all these of ske: our Sex. And what Answer did you give him know said she An Answer (said I) so little serious a lation affured him that I was none of those Girls that suffer themselves to be easily transported with Flatteries. You (replyed my Mother) give me a Character of Monsieur de Haute-Cour quite different What racter of Monsieur de Hante-Cour quite different What from the Idea I had of him: I judged him will and honest, and found in him by that Discourt you to I have had with him all the Characters of a Man Preser of Spirit and Parts, and you would have me be lieve by the Picture you draw of him, that he is urning one of those Impertinent Fools that Court even though one they see; I am sure you now speak against your own sentiments. Such as he is, (answerd liked I coldly) are wise wish the wise, and young will the young. My Mother return'd no answer, by Motion only shook her Head and smiled. I took my least ove, of her, and was about to withdraw, which she see in

Moi io v on, remi

ing, faid, I have one word more to fav about Monfieur de Haute-Cour, whom I find fo honeft and to well qualified, that were it not for his Religion, I should with him for your Husband above all others in France. Mother, faid I, don't vou remember that you have disposed of me already in favour of your Cousins Son? Ah, replyed she, if Monfieur de Haute-Cour would but turn Catholick, my good Kinfman of whom you speak, should foon be forced to look out for another Match. At that inflant an untoward Fancy took me to abuse my Mother, which succeeded well enough. I'le tell you one thing, Mother, added I, Monsieur de Haute-Cour is indeed a Man of worth, and hath an extream Passion for me, and would do any thing to get me, even what is in its felf most difficult, and I have a great Esteem for him, but I neither can, nor ever shall be able to love him, though he should turn Roman Catholick for my sake: It may be I might have loved him, but my knowing that you have destined me for your Rearion, makes me very indifferent as to any other Men but him: You have declared your Resolution, that I should in this be Obedient to your Will, nor can my Inclinations turn as the Wind doth. What say you, Madamoiselle Justine, (replyed my Mother in a rage?) know Insolent, that I'le teach you to conform to my Intentions; Get out of my Presence, lest I make you feel to what degree ou have enraged me. Which I did, without reurning a word of Answer, for I knew her well nough.

Immediately I went to Bed, having my mind illed with the Idea's of those things that this lay happened unto me: I shall not relate all the sorious of my Heart, the Principal of which was ove, to which my Soul now began to yield. The admirable Qualities of Mounsieur de Haute-Cour

E 2

made

made an impression on me; the Knowledge that I said I; but had of my Fathers Will, and of my Mothers, the signed me Passion of my Brother, all these things together made him in an me entertain an affection, which otherwise I should but now not so soon have done: Besides, I saw that as all the fairs stood with me at present, I must dispense with ed my Mo fome forms of Love. Nevertheless, I had indiffe ked me Y rent good rest this Night, the multitude of my have you thoughts did not disturb my sleep, which they would that he rented to the state of the fome forms of Love. Nevertheless, I had indiffe. have done, had I been under the Power of one that to g

fingle Person. I was but just awake when I saw my Mother come into my Chamber; Mother, faid I, I believe you are come to chide me for being fo fluggish: No 7. flire, faid the, I would have you lye ttill, and ha ving commanded my waiting Gentlewoman to leave whence he the Chamber; Yesterday said she, you put me into Mother ha a little Passion, but let that pass; you spake some (aid he) what concerning Mountier de Haute-Cour, which I of Souls? have thought on all this Night, you said that he loved is but the you passi nately, and would do any thing to get you but what Do you think (said my Mother) that the Loye is Bawd mu hath for you is capable of making him to embrace out, must the Catholick Religion? I cannot (replyed I) give behauche you a positive answer in this matter, but I know that dent, said his Love is as fervent as ever any was; and thathe her you'll is not so o'is finate an Hagonot as my Father or Broom imeleave ther, I can affure you that he is one that will hear he no good Counsel. Well Daughter (said she) for am not en to good Councel. Well Daughter (faid the) for lam not ing it is so, would you not be glad to be Instrumed hinks kn tal in saving so illusticious a Person as Mounsier a lave put a Haute-Coar is? How meritorious will it be in the sight of take the of God, to be engaged in bringing him into the true of Malice. Church! On the other hand, how happy will your ind to be in having such a Husband as he is! Have you no Eyo hid I, the to see that Mounsier de Haute comes near Mountier de Haute Coar? I have considered all these than the outers seen out

have him. be fure ke My Bro

I; but the Opinion which I had that you deed me for Monsieur de Masse, makes me look on in another manner than I did on at y other Man: now I know your mind, favour me so far as to me how I may please you? Ah Daughter, (replying Mother) this is not the Insolence that provome Yestrrday. This therefore is what I would evou to do, to carry it so towards your Lover, he may never lose the Love he bears you; so to get you, he may do whatever you would thim. Go, think well of what I have said, and are keep it secret: Having said thus, she embra-

me, and left my Chamber.

ly Brother was gotten into my Chamber I know how, and hid himself behind the Hangings, from nce he came forth as foon as he perceived my her had left the Chamber: And is it thus, Sifter he) that you are an Instrument in perverting ouls? Know, that what you are ordained to do at the part of a Spiritual Bawd, 'tis fo indeed; what Name shall we give it. when the Spiritual d must deliver her self Corporally, or to speak must be Married to him whose Mind she hath suched from the Truth? Stay (Monsieur Impu-, faid I) till I am up, and we shall then see wheyou'l dare talk as now you do, in the mean leave my Chamber : Ha Sifter (faid he) he that not knew you would think you very Angry, but n not come hither to quarrel with yo . Meks knowing my Natural Temper, you should put a better interpretation on my words, than ake them as though they had been spoken out falice. I am come to take you for my Confident, to be yours. Wee'l discourse of that by and by I, this Chamber is not proper for such a Conation, do you be in the lower Hall, and I'll meet there in a short time: my Brother hearing this, t out of my Champer the time way that he came 10.

in. Immediately my waiting Gentlewoman came to drefs me, after which I went down to the Hall

where I found my Brother expeding me.

As foon as he faw me, he faid, I must confes that fince the coming of Mounfier de Roche-Blanche and his Family, I have found a great alteration in my Person. I believe, (said I) smiling, 'ris only Madamoifelle de Gariolles hath wrought this change, her Father and Mother having contributed nothing to it. Tis true, faid he, but do you think that in only the Beauty of this Charming Girle, that hath captivated me, her Spirit, her Humour, and a thoufand other rare qualities which the poffeffeth, have conquered me; and so conquered me too, that if! am not united to her in an indiviolable Bond, I shall nover enjoy any Concentment in this World. As far as I (ee (answered 1) I know more good New relating to you, than you do your felf: And why, faid he, wicked Creature that you are, did you not tell it me ! And why, faid I, are you grown to proud, that fince you have had a Miffiris, you disdain to remember that you have a Sifter; and immediately ! told him all that I had heard in the Garden. And Madamoifelle de Garifolles, faid he, was the with you? Yes Brother, faid I, the was: And what faid the, (faid he) with a kind of Transport? Madamoifelle de Gariottes, faid I, heard a'l the Discourse, & a Person of much Merit and Vertue.

I had no fooner spake these last words, but see came into the Hall with her Brother; Ah, (said she,) I have surprized you both in a very earnest Conserence. 'Tis true, said my Brother, my Sister han told me some things so pleasant, and in which I am so much concern'd, that any other besides your sel would have very much disobliged me to have interrupted me. Then we'll withdraw again, said she no Madamoiselle by no means, (replyed my Brother) I must impart our secret to you, though you

knew

kne

1, 1

who

ble

Mo

Sift

Mac

and

wel

the

rene

Eter

ceal

the

fpak

cafie

her

day.

ai R

priv

conc

ceive

and

facis

We

thing

para.

anot

one

Citte

and

Bin

next

man

us ve

much

1

knew it long before I did. You have done amifs, find the to me: I have done like a good Sifter, faid I, who could no longer forbear to affure a Brother whom the loves, of his happiness; my greatest trouble was how to do it conveniently : But - But faid Mounfier de Hante-Cour, interrupting us, I have a Sifter as good and faithful as Mounfier de Ponfins. Madamoiselle Garisolles and I looked on each other, and thould possibly have reproached each other, had wen't been both guilty: At length we judged it the best way to pardon each other mutually. renewed our Amity, and our Brothers swore an Eternal Union: for my part, I could no longer conceal my fentiments for Mountier de Haute-Cour- And the beautiful Eyes of Madamoifelle de Carrifolles, spake so plainly in favour of my Erother, that 'twas easie for him thence to judge of the Motions of ber Heart.

I shall not relate all the Discouse that passed this day, which was the last of Mounficur and Madam de Roche-Blanche's abode with us. My Brother had a private Conference with Mounsieur de Haute-Cow, concerning the Method they ought to take to deceive my Mother. He was with her about an hour and half in the Afternoon, and the feemed very well facisfied with the Conversation she had with him. We all of us went into the Garden, but were nothing fo chearful as formerly, the thoughts of a feparation fpoiling all our Mirth. My Mother had another Discourse with Mounsteur de Hante-Cour, and one with Mounfieur de Roche-Blanche. My Father entertuned himself with Madamonfelle de Garifolles and ne, and my Brother with Madam de Roche-Blance; what passed it's not worth relating. The next Morning being come, our dear Guelts, after many tender Adieu's took Coach to return, and left us very well farisfied with their Company, but very much . ffliced at their departure.

My.

My Brother having acquainted my Father with my Norhers degfins on Mounfieur de Haute-Com be judged the conjuncture very favourable, and the 'twas fit to amufe her with some such hores, with the doing of which I were entrufted. My Brothe had communicated his thoughts to Mounfieur Harry or, who adding in concert, wrote me fed Paffionate Letters, as though he would have fluck at nothing to obrain me. My Brother on the other hand, although he was affured of my Fathers Confert with respect to Madamoiselle de Gei tolles; ver he prayed my Mother to speak of it to my Father, who returned a favourable answer h a word, all things went well enough, when I found my felf utterly firipr in a moment, of all that Trancarrier which I enjoyed, expeding a favourable opportupiry to make my Declaration.

This stroke fo fad, that I have reason for ever to lament it, was the Death of my Father, with whom I may truly fay, all my Joy dved too, and all me playures are buried. He fell fick fome days after the departure of Mounfieur de Rocht-I who. His Diftemper was to tharp and violent, that we begun to doubt of his Life almost us fono as he or mplained; and the first day that he took his Bed, he foretold that he should never rice more. This sudden and violent Sickness so overwhelmed my Mothers Spirit, that we thought he would have accompanyed my Father, who in the height of his Diftemper, discourfed always with the same Moderation and Judgment that he used when he was in perfect Hea'th. My Mother was fo weakned, that the could be carried but twice to fee my Father, and that with all imaginable Inconveniences; yet the would have me always with him, to ferve him; and I believe that God ordained it should be thus, that I might have opportunity to discourse more familiarly with my Father, who Spake. fpake larly fide, My

Life, flirion would but I decree for wought feel of that it kals, you fl

a mu embrainto Thorn fuch 'twere Grace walk of the

old c

WCCD

No

perfit

put y will be force thee l

have

spake such things as I shall never forget. Parricularly on a certain day when he saw me by his Beds-

fide, he fpake thus :

My dear Daughter, I should joyfully leave this Life, if I saw your Body out of the sink of Super-strion, as your Mind is. I always thought God would have made use of me in so good a Work, but I now see that in his Eternal Council he hath decreed to finish this great Work by another hand, for which I bless his Holy Name, as indeed we ought to bless him for all things: And because I seel my Life stealing away by little and little, and that in a thort time you'l fee me only a dead Carkais, take care to remember and profit by what you shall now hear.

Never had any one the design that you have, and persisted in it, but sound himself surrounded with a multitude of Calemities. When men resolve to embrace the Truth, they must also resolve to enter into a vale of Tears, and into a Path covered with Thorns; that is to say, they must resolve to hear such hard and cruel Tryals and Afflictions, as that twere impossible to hear them without the special Grace of God. This hath made many who began to walk in the way of Truth, withdraw upon the sight of the many Labours, Miseries, and Reproaches wherewith they must encounter, and return to their old course of Mirth and Pleasure, whose End is yet weeping and gnashing of teeth.

How many things must you suffer, before you can put your good Design in Execution! It may be it will be discovered; it may be your Mother when he once hears of it, will cause you to be carried by sorce into a Nunnery, besides other severicies which heel use towards you. It may be also your Relations will try by all imaginable Flattery and Kindness to turn you from your Resolution, and will not have recourse unto rigour, till they find all their

Es

promiles and allurements uneffectual. Try your felf, Jaffire, whether you are able to refift this varicty of temptations; for if you find you cannot bear these Tryals, twere better for you to abide what you are, than after having embraced the Truth to Apostatize from it, by which you would far more grievously scandalize men, and offend God.

But suppose you cicape all those Miseries and Violences wherewith you are threatned by the Papifis yet you must undergo others from the Reformed. which are no less terrible and inevitable: Don't expect that the Integrity of their Manners should always correspond with the Holiness of their Religion. You'l find amongst them neither that Piety nor Chanty, nor Modesty nor Patience, nor Weanedness from the World, which you may fancy they have. Very few amongst them will take notice of what you have done; and fuch as do, will ver do it with fo much feebleness, coldness, and as it were constraint, that you I be in great danger of being scandalized to see their hearts fo destitute of Zeal as they are.

You, (my Daughter) have been renderly Educated in your Fathers House, of a very Ancient and Illuffrious Family in Provence, nor were you in like lihood to have left your Fathers House, unless w enter into that of an Husband worthy of you: But alas, I tear you'l find it very hard to be torced from your Countrey and Inheritance, to go into firange Countries, where you may be attacqued with Mifery or Sickness, or the persecutions of your Relations, or it may be with all these Evils together, Can your Heart which hath been used to Grandur, Delicacy, and Picatures, endure to be in Contemps, by reason of that Want and Indigence to which you may be reduced? will it not regrett the Oynion and Fleih-pois of Egypt? Have you Resolution enough to bear the being thrown from the highest Prosperity, into the lowest Abysse of Ad-

verting

erfire

blycd

re ve

V VOI

One

rade

That

efus.

ented

oefall

er the

orned

Goo

his H

CACV O

o hir

afie.

more

Pleafu

Repro

e len

Condu

o lea

nd t

Conre

or a

alit

1 1

Colnu

he r

vill g

וני וו

ben.

ure i

best 1

Conti

VIII i

erfiry in a moment? Speak, Justine, are you reolved to bear all these, and it may be such evils as re yet more terrible, which it may please God to

v you with?

One of the first Reslections (said I) that I ever nade after I began to read the Holy Scripture, was, that I must prepare to bear the Cross of the Lord esus, if I would follow him; and although I reprented to my Mind all the Tribulations which may sefall us, under the most terrible Idea's in the world, et they could not, hinder me from desiring to be owned to our Lords Invisible and Catholick Church.

God strengthen you (continued my Father) in this Holy Reselution, and support you by the efficacy of his Holy Spirit. If you earnessly pray unto him, hee'l bestow on you such Consolations as silmake you regard all your Afflictions as light and tasse. Remember Daughter, that nothing can be more honourable than to abandon the Pomps and Pleasures of the World, to sollow Jesus Christ in Reproach and Shame; and nothing can be so extellent and lovely as to range your self under his Condust, in a time when such as are his seem about to leave him. Let no difficulties discourage you, and though your whole Life! should be spent in Contempt and Misery; yet your Troubles are but or a Moment, compared to that Glorious Immoralit that waits for you.

I represent these things to you in their blackest colours, to prepare your Spirit for Constancy under the most terrible Afflictions, but it may be God will graciously prevent your being exposed to them, et its good to be prepared for whatever may happen. You have often sound a great deal of Pleaure in reading the History of the Martyrs, 'tis the pest Book you can read next the Holy Scriptures. Continue still to read it, you'l therein sind what will instruct and consirm you in the Truth; you'l

also find Examples of all forts of Persons, to help you to persevere in the true Religion to the death.

During this Discourse of my Father, I fell on my knees and killed his hands, not being able to speak a word: But my Father went on, and laying his right hand on my Head, gave me his Bleffing in these words. My Daughter, said he, God who be flows excellent favores on fuch dving persons as he loves, bath in a manner absolutely Incomprehensible to Flesh and Blood, revealed to me, That you will accomplish all my hopes concerning your entire Convertion, and your perseverance in that Trut which you have already internally embraced; wherefore I befeech our good Lord, abounding in Eterna mercies, that he would bless you with Spiritual Bles fings through Jefus Christ our Lord; that his Power may thine forth in your Infirmities, and his Praile in your Weakness t'ar he would make you victorious over all the Saaragems and Ambushes, and all the open Violences of your Enemies; that he would be your Father, and his Holy Spirit your Guide a all your ways, to the end that you may finish you life to the Glory of your God. "Heavenly Father " (faid le, lifting up his hands,) I recommend to the " Protection this poor Sheep, which thou haft begu to draw to thy felf. Deliver her from the Mouth " of ravenous Beafts; The is thy Creature, the is thin " Image; the hath been redeemed by the precious " Blood of thy well-beloved Son, leave not thy work "imperfect, but vouchsafe her an entrance into the " Spiritual Sheepfold, that the may have an affurance " of entring into thy Glory. Hear, O Lord, the Pray " ers of thy dying Servant, who calls on thy Name " through the Merits of thine only Son our Saviour.

When my Father had ended, I again kissed hand, and had only Power to say thus. Monsieu, said I, I will not (said he) have you call me thus I am your Father. Father, then said I, I am so established.

rirch

tire

one

or

(fa

nor

Vou

obe

Cha

ther

who

ever

B(17

which

VOUL

115

crec

port

way

harre

vide

thin

God

are Defi

ons

Mot

tend

but

occa

I w

that

red

my

bly

M

tirely refigned to your Will, that I am ready to obey you immediately, without any farther delay or precaution, happen what will. No, my Child, (faid he) you must know that true Piery doth not make Persons rash in their Actions: I'le give your Brother such Directions as I judge fit, do you

obey him, and you'l do well enough.

At this very inflant my Brother came into the Chamber: I am very glad to fee you, faid my Father, to recommend your Sifter to your Care, to whom you must for the future be a Father, wharever it cost you. Mounsieur and Madam de Roche Blanche will affift her in making her Abjuration, which as foon as the hath done, take care to fend her into Germany to our Relations there. I know your Mother will be mightily enraged at it, but is better to obey God than Men. Use such secrecy in what you do, as a business of this importance requires; especially let none know which way your Sister is gone, nor where she is: I have taken Care that you shall be sufficiently provided with Money for this Expedition: In other things follow your own judgment. Above all, begg God that he would direct you to fuch means as are most proper for the accomplishment of this Defign. As for other Affairs, follow my Directions; especially show all imaginable respect to your Mother, as your own Duty, her Virtue, and that tender Love the hath for you requires.

My Father would have continued his Discourse, but was seized with a sainting Fit, without doubt occasioned from his speaking beyond his strength. I was so affrighted at it, that I cry'd out so loud that all the Servants of the House ran to our assistance. At length he revived again, and required that a Minister might be called. I have (said my Brother) sent for one, but he cannot possibly be here this Night: Well (said my Father)

this shall not hinder my dying like a good Christian. He desired to see my Mother, and I went to call her, and she came into my Father's Chamber so pale and disorder d, that I thought she would have Dyed before him. Madam, (said he) this is the time, the Moment of our Separation, after having lived a long time very happily together: I desired to see you for two Reasons, the one to thank you for the Care you have taken of me, and that Affection you have shown me; and the other that you might be a Witness of my Death, and that you may judge whether it be possible that such as dye in the Lord, as I am sure through Grace I shall, should be damn'd, as

your Confessors oblige you to believe.

My Mother could not hear these sad words without finking down on my Father's Bed, through Grief: Alas, Sir, faid the, may I not Dye with you! What should I do in this World, having loft you, after having lived to Iweetly with you! I Conjure you, Sir, (faid the) if I have failed in ferving you according to your Merit, that you would Pardon my Ignorance. I have, Madam, (faid in Father) no reason at all to complain of you; on the contrary, I have been very happy in you, and therefore I Command my Children to obey you to the Death, (faving in Matters of Conscience) and if they do otherwise, they sail be d prived of my Bleffing. But, Madam, I must end this Discourse to think on what is much more important, for time is very precious; and remaining filent for some time, and having taken a small draught of a Cordial Potion, he with an intelligi le Voice Praved thus, after he had defired my Mother to be attentive to it, and not to be difpleated with his words.

Almighty

God .

red t

210

gain

211

fifty

17

Sanv

and M

Grace

Fullice

22, 70

cey

hat t

iom .

appear

f Gr

rom t

bee :

A Inighty God, and Merciful Father of our Lord 31,45 Christ, I humbly prostrate my self before in Inine Majesty, to thank thee for the many Faours and Protections thou haft touchfafed me during be whole Course of my Life, so that I have nothing else o fay, but O Lord thy Bleffings are upon me, what half I render thee for all thy Mercies; and yet O my God I have offended thee a thousand ways, my fins exsed the Hairs of my Head in number; my whole Life ato been a continual feries of Iniquities; I have finned reginft thee, O Lord, even against thee, and have dered to have languished under the severest stroats thy vigour; if thou shouldest deal with me as thou a Julice mightell do ; I must necessarily bear in my Sony and Soul the marks of thy most dreadful Anger end Wrath: Tet though my fins have abounded, thy Grace doth much more abound, and hath surpaffed thy fulice: Wherefore what terror loever my fins cause in re, yet I trust that through Jesus Christ my Saciour, ver Bill all be pardoned, and remembred no more; hat the Blood of thy Son feed on me hall cleanfe me om all my filthin ffes, and that I hall with boldness spear before thy Ibrone, which will be to me a Throne Grace, and my Heart anticipating my Deliverance rom this Prison of the Body of Death, flyes towards bee :

O. God of Hofts, how pleafant are
The Tabernacles of thy Grace!
How full of most refreshing Joy
Lord is thy glorious Dwelling-place!

My Soul doth long, yea fainteth for
The Courts and Dwellings of the Lord,
My Heart and Fleih cry after thee,
The living and the Holy God.

Break those feeble Bonds, O my God, that bind my yet to the World, raise up my Soul to thee, and to the facred Inspirations of thy Holy Spirit accompli-

He would have gone on, but could not then: He only find to my Brother, Ferdinand, read me the 17th. Chapter of St. John, with the 25th, 26th 27th. Pfalms, in profe, and as my Brother read then words of the 27th. Pfalm, Seek my Face, faith to Lord, my Father rendred them in Verse after him:

My Heart O God runs after thee,
I humbly begg thy Grace;
Then feek my Face, faidft thou to me,
Lord, I will feek thy Face.

Immediately his Speech and Life left him. Mr Brother who had 'till now suppressed his Grief gave himself up to it, and fainted under it, as all did my Mother and I. Some of the Servants that were come into the Chamber, used their utmost endeavours to affift us, and get us thence. The whole House was full of nothing but grief and forrow. My Father governed his House with sud Order and severe Sweetness, that all the Servans loved him, and yet trembled in his Presence: The were therefore exceeding forrowful for the loss of so good a Matter: But befides, they fave the Wife little different from her Husband, and the Son and Daughter from their Father. My Brother being of the strongest Nature, was the first that recovered, and came to himself, and took a special Can of my Mother, and also of me, who was long bereft of my fenses than any other, as I had good reason to, be, for I had been happy, had I dye that very moment.

Neva

per

0 |

tion

tho

te

cr

nd

Qua

T

on

fife

ear lepr

w . mp!

ne,

M

laid

rd

y F

are

non

nd

11

ıd

15.

pa

VCI

Never was there greater desolation than that my Fathers Death caused in our Family; my Mother pent whole Days and Nights in Complaints, my rother who was of a very active Spirit, feemed o have loft all his Vivacity, and for my part I led very languishing Life, hoping that in the end I tould be overwhelmed with Grief, and thereby scape the Miseries which my Father had foretold. hofe Predictions the event fully confirmed. In be mean time my Brother took Care for my Faers Funeral, which was a very honourable one. nd at which were many persons of the highest bushiry, whom my Fathers Virtue and Integrity had ade his Admirers.

This was but the beginning of my forrows, for I on found my felf in a Labyrinth of fuch preffing diferies, that 'tis a kind of Miracle, that I could car up under them; for I found my felf at once eprived of my Father by Death, of my Brother v Absence, and separated from my Mother by an mplacable harred which she had conceived against ne, which it feemed probable the would never

wasfide.

My Mother had provided me with a Waitinglaid that was a Catholick, and withall the most wiced and dangerous Hypocrite in all the Kingdom. y Father and Brother had often advised me to beare of her, which I did, so that she could never now what passed between my Father, my Brother and me, what diligence foever she used to pry into which vexed her exceedingly; for my Mother d placed her with me as a Spy over all my asios, and had promised her a large Reward if she buld discover what she knew, both concerning me particular, and all the rest of the House. Yet was once so imprudent as to lock up some Papers in r fight in a little Box, (with the Key of which would never trust her) which Papers were written

with my Brothers hand, and contained the Discourse that he had with the Father Matthew, and some

Notes on divers poynts of Controversie.

When I was fick my Maid resolved to steal m Key from me, and I was so low, that I neglected a my ordinary Precautions, nor did I when I opene my Box observe that any thing had been taken or of it. In the mean time this cunning Slut Soubrate knowing that should she have carried these Paper to my Mother during the height of her affliction she should not at all please her, did what was so more devilish, carrying these Papers her self to the Father Matthew, adding what she thought sit is word of Mouth. The Father having these Paper resolved to lose no time, to revenge himself on m Brother, and to prevent me from Executing my differs.

The first thing he did was to visit my Mother and only discouried her in the General, and at distance, without discovering all that he had in hi mind. My mother took but little notice of what h faid, whil'st he was with her, but having better con sidered it after his departure, sent to desire his Re turn; and the Good Flather, who Expected such medage, would not let flip the opportunity, but made a full discovery of what he knew. If I knew my mother aright, I believe that the had made him acquainted with all that the was refolved to a especially about my Marriage with Monsieur de Hant Cour, and being very well affured that the Fathe Matthew was an old crafty Fox, I believe that h shewed my Mother that the was abused. Yet because I cannot be positive in this. I shall only discourses the Contequences of this affair.

I observed, that my mother did not seem so must afflicted as she used to be, and that she converse not with me or my Brother with her ordinary a miliarity, and that she would sometimes enter half

12

nto

the

thir

wie

Bro

ol

nen

1110

me

thie

2110

nai

hou

rg

wha

Tho

Hor

ver

nd

ne)

ipot

t, v

M

ofing

04

I

nv

o f

tein

ho im.

vho

the into my Chamber, and view all places in it, and that the lad frequent discourses with my maid. All these things made me open my Eyes, and begat in me a sufficient lest I were betray'd by this Wretch. My Brother also was gone from home, being obliged to look after the affairs of the Family, so that I had none that I could confide in. At length I was desperately alkarmed by one of our servants, who came to me and said, I know nor, Madamoiselle, what misting in this Castle, I see some preparations which don't please me; and your Waitingmaid was heard to say, That within three days we hould see a Great alteration here. At the first hearing of this, I was terribly surprized, and knew not what to say, but at length I said to this Person, Thou knowest where my Brother is, take the best horse in the Stable and go after him, and whatever business he is about, let him lay it all aside, and return immediately hither. If you please (said he) to write a Note to him, it will be better; upon which I hasten'd into my Chamber to write to, which I did in these words.

My most Dear Brother,

Your presence is so necessary at this time, that if you delay your Return but one Hour, you bazard the essay Sister that loves you better than her Life. Adieur Brother, I have more need of your assistance than ou have of my words; nor have I time to tall you all hat's done in this place.

I had lest the Door of my Chamber open, and my Trairress seeing that I wrote, hid her self, o see what I would do after I had written, and teing that I delivered a Billet to the Servant, who was ready to take Horse when I brought it im, she ran and acquainted my Mother with it, who sent after him immediately to stop and search him;

him; but he was gone too far, so that 'twas to me in we purpose When my Mother saw this, she doubt which reason she looke athware on me for a long time without saying a word to me: She had all sing fresh Discourses with my Maid, who did such thing have in my Presence that I had but too much reason have to suspend that I was just upon the brink of ruine have I spent this Day in a great deal of perplexity; some afficient the Affilitions that were like to befall me, which made me imploy all my time in reading the lifts.

Holy Scriptures and in Prayer.

About Sun-set my Mother sent for me into the sufficient to speak with me there. This Message fills were me with trembling and terrour, yet I went down are to her. I sound my Mother alone in one of the Alone leys, as soon as she saw me, she looked on me with our Eves that seemed to sparkle with Indignation, yet averaged and nothing to me, as neither did I to her; so that so can some time we both were silent. At length, your hear he is very proud, Madamoiselle Justine, said she, mobiling me to speak first. Oh good God, (said to the what may this mean! is it my part, Mother, to say speak before you? or not rather to expect you had pleasure? She made no reply, but continued on he walk, and I with her. But immediately I saw the sone Men enter the Garden, whom I knew not, (where of one seemed of a good Carriage.) as also my Mal on with some other men, bringing with them sud things as belonged to me. things as belonged to me.

If law all these things without being able to got ake what they meant, when my Mother asked the aloud, whether all things were ready? Yes Mada answered the Gentilest, they are. Then my has ther turning toward me, spake to me in such tenses as were most birter and cruel. Ingrateful and periodious Daughter, said she, You have made it you business to deceive your Mother, the day is computed.

ful

ake

in which I'll revenge me on you, for all the Treasons, which you and your Brother have acted against me, and hinder your damnable Projects. An Iron Grate hall fecure you, and answer for all your actions du-ring your life. Go, follow those Men, to whom I have given Orders what to do, unless you would have them dragg you to the place where I would have you be. The Passion that terzed me on these aft words, quite transported me. Drag me! said to lifting up my hand to Heaven, I said, I call God witness of the perfiction sand treachery which hash been acted against me, and I pray him to dever me out of your hand, which I hope he will do.

Farewell Madam, after this baseness the worst place
I need the World will be better to me than to be with In the World will be better to me than to be with ou: And having faid thus, I turned about, and oue my hand to the Gentileft of the two, and it is not our of the Garden by a Gate that led towards in he High-way, where I found a Coach with four mores, and four Troopers to guard it: I went into the Coach with my Maid and the two Men. It is as above two hours after before I spoke one word, and I was so overwhelmed with wearines, vexation and rage against my Ravithers, that I did not be been my telf to enquire who they were, nor what had obliged them to take my Mothers part, and become the Ministers of her Violence.

My Maid was grown so impudent, that she durst sold over my Miseries, laughing at my very sace, are considered in the courage, Madamoiselle, (taid she) your considered in the courage, Madamoiselle, (taid she) your considered in the courage, Madamoiselle, (taid she) your considered in the before my Eves such a Traiteress as you to and which it may be hath not her like in all the World. See (said she) what Persons get by bing their Duty! they are a bused for doing good,

of ping their Duty! they are abused for doing good, u are only enraged against me because I opposed

your Intentions, which would have ruined your so If (faid 1) you make not this infolent Wretch he her Tongue, I'll throw my felf out of the Cond though it cost my Life. Ah Madamoiselle, taid for you speak very loftily, as though you were sill a Porfins, it may be you would not do amis tou your felf to other Language. The infolence these words made me turn pale with Anger, which one of the Men perceiving, imposed filence on Sa brette, If you hold not your Tongue, (faid he to her I shall find a means to force you to it, which yo may repent of: This threatning flopt her mouth.

During this, the Night grew fo dark, that in Wood through which we were to pais, the Coach man mistook his way. The Troopers that guardo lace us called on all fides, to find some House where the might refresh themselves; but none answered the Calls but the Eccho of the Wood: At length 'two arts resolved to spend the Night where we were; the so two men had the discretion to leave the Coach fer after having that it fast, rather to prevent in Patight, than to secure me from the injuries of the can Cold and Wind as they pretended. I had this de ten endured so many satigues, and had taken so line at rest some Nights before, that I slept very sound end rill the Morning, when our Atteddants were into greater trouble than before, seeing themselves in a unknown Countrey in the midst of a vast Forrest, in which will be some supposed by the ways exceeding bad, with out Guide or Victuals, and without hopes of being to the able to reach to any other place.

They unharneffed the Horfes of the Coach, a ept i unbridled those of the Troopers, who were ma ould, happy than their Mafters in that they had when with to fill their Bellies. This Accident rejoya me exceedingly in my Troubles: Well, my Friends.

(faid I) you have carried me away by force to be the young with hunger: I shall take my Death very poof

rail

dri

id us

I

XD.

rea

T

pair

me

v '

ern N'as

up

the

the

ently, for I defire nothing else but to have you eep me Company; this I am sure goes against the rain with you. My Maid was upon the point of pespair; in the mean time I had the comfost of indicing over her in my turn. Wretch that thou art, and I, thou art the cause of my Death, but rightens Heaven will that thou dye with me; and where I shall receive Consolation and Joy, thou art to spect nothing else but the Torment due to thy treatons.

These words filled her with Consussion and Demir, for she had not a word to answer. After some
me we again set forward; but 'twas past Noon by
my Watch, when we found our selves in the same
lace, and the mist was so thick that we could disern our way no better than in the Night. At length
was resolved to send our four Troopers into sour
arts of the Wood to enquire the way, and to get
a some Victuals. Three of them returned to us,
ster having rid a great way, and taken a great deal
f Pains to no purpose, 'Twas then that I believed
he earnest that we should be all starved; and having
sten but little for two days before, I was so very weak
that I sainted, and they had a great deal of troue to bring me to my self, though they threw
bundance of water on my Face.

Just as I was recovered, the sourth Trooper rerned, and told us that about a League and half off,
e should find a good Village; whereupon I went
to the Coach again, but not having strength to
t upright, I was forced to lye along; those that
ept me Company placed themselves as well as they
suld, that they might not incommode me; and
the end of some Hours we came to the Village,
the great joy of all our Company besides my
st. In this Village we had some New Adventures,
it you must give me leave to deferr the Relati-

of them 'till another time.

CHAP. V.

in

155,

our.

The whole Company being again met, one bus, them defired Madamoiselle de St. Phale to pur lo the her History; for, said she, we lest you in Wood, dying for Hunger, favour us fo far as to have acquaint us how you recovered your Life and Li Day

There are some, answered she, that take such that the Delight in relating their Miseries, that when they find the molecular them, will utter their Complaint of the inanimate Creatures: I am not of this Humour seal for its to one a doubling of my Afflictions to the late them; yet I will deny my self to please you will follow that which so little deserves to be beeded in me that which so little deserves to be heeded by ome

you.

The fourth Trooper that was sent to enquire the way, had indeed better success than the other three, but was so imprudent as not to take will so him any Victuals, or a Guide to direct us, which identified not whether to call an Happiness or Mike a gry, because I rather defired Death than seared a car spiritual Meditations. Be of good Courage Made moiselle, said the elder of those two to whom a buch Mother had committed me, we are told there is To a Village within a League and half, in which we then Mother had committed me, we are told there a Village within a League and half, in which we may rest and refresh your self. I hope, said to I shall dye before I come thicher, and that then by God will deliver me from my Mothers via I lence, and you from the reproach of being its N sed nisters. Madam d'Ombreval, answered he, lovespice tenderly, and what she has done is only our self, and she day sear, least you should ruine your self, and she day in

ires nothing else but to place you where you may interrain better Thoughts than those you had, and which have obliged her to use you as she doth. Though these words were somewhat intolent, yet I contented my felf with faying, That God is righteous, and will fooner or later reward men according to their wicked Defigns.

no their wicked Defigns.

Poliply you may wonder that my Mother should have so far lost her reason, as to abundon an only Daughter to the discretion of two men, sour Troopers, and a Chamber-maid whose daminable wickedness she well knew. I must say thus much in her affision, that these two men were in a sence alsold to our house, that the Elder had always a great self of passion for my Mothers interest, who for the part loved him and did him many kindnesses to that he whose Name was Monsieur de Rabours, awing but a mean Estate, and being driven to men straits, had reason to keep in my Mothers Fatour, who paid him well for his Services. My Mother ser sent for him, discovered her Design to him, and summable difficultied him with necessary bonest Youth, so I a good Carriage, and the others Nephew, and could sain have discoursed with me, had I not been carefully watch't by his Unkle and my Maid. The Evening approaching, my Maid less the bach, and the Unkle went to give some Direction to be a carefully watch't by his Unkle and my Maid. The Evening approaching, my Maid less the bach, and the Unkle went to give some Direction to be a carefully watch't by his Unkle and my Maid. The Evening approaching, my Maid less the bach, and the Unkle went to give some Direction to be a carefully watch's by his Unkle and my Maid.

to propers and the Coach-man for their being ready to next Morning, which gave the young Rabours is opportunity of speaking thus. It you, Madabutelle, (said he) have been deceived, so have I, I could never have imagined that they had entire you of my Repentance, command me any see you of my Repentance, command me any of in which I may ferve you, and I'll readily do 4 (peak speak sincerely? for a ter such baseness I have reason to distrust the whole World. If I deceive you, said he, may Heaven crush me with its Thunder, but my Actions shall free you from suspecting my sincerity. And for my part, said I, if God be so gracious to me as to free me out of these Troubles by your Means, I promise you as great an acknowledgment as you can expect from a Virgin of my Brith. Go, do the best you can, I give you sulpower to take what Course you can for my De-

1

16

1

0

15

T

of

11

m

1

11

20

W

qu

he

fa!

he

nei

on

and

mo

on

ved

wei

Wet

fide

100

wh

out

vet

tha

liverance.

We had hardly ended this short Discourse, when my Maid returned, and immediately after the Old Rabours, and a Country-man with him. Here's a good Man faid he, which is as it were an Angel fem from Heaven, who offers to guide us to the Town of - will you go thither to Night (faid he! You know, (faid I very coldly) that I have no wil left me, do what you pleafe. I believe, Madamos felle, (faid the Nophew) that we had best go the ther this Evening, and am certain that all of us had be better there than here: Do what you will, faid! you have no power over me but what Cod hather ven you, and which he can also take from vou Hereupon the Unkle and the Nephew discoursed to gether fome thort time, and the refult of their Co fulcation, was, That the Troopers were commande to bridle their Horses which fed at large, and the Coachman to harness his, which was all done in quarter of an hour. When every thing was read the Country-man who perfessly, knew all the tur ings of the Forrest, got upon the Coach, and an that a finall wind had difficuted the Fogg, the Mo thene very bright, to that all things feemed to a cur for our Deliverance, out of what feemed to an enchanted Forreft.

We had an hours riding before we could not the Village; but when we were once of for of

Wood, every one of us feemed fomewhat comforted, in the hopes we had of refreshing our felves when we came to our Quarters, whither at length we came, though 'twas after Eleven at Night. from as we were come. I feil imo a deeper fwoon than ever; fo that they could not bring me to my felf, either by throwing water on my face, or by any torment they inflicted on me. At length we arrived at the Gate of the best Inn in the whole Place, where the old Rabours demanded whether there were any Lodgings for us: the Landlady of the House replyed. That all her Chambers were taken up by the Company of another Coach, except two, which, if we liked them, were at our service, and invited us to see them : For my part, (faid the Nephew) I judge it best to take any that we can have; for feeing the now lyes in a fwoon, if fel hould happen to dye under our hands, we shall be accured of being her Murderers; and her Mother who hath committed her to you, will not fail of requiring the Lite of her Daughter of you, and make her self a Party against you. You say well, Cousen, faid the Unkle, (as I was fince told) let us carry her up, her indisposition is caused only by weariness, fasting, and the fatigues that the hath endured; one moments rest and refreshment will recover her. and to morrow wee'l continue her Journey.

Having faid thus, they took me out of the Coach, more like a dead Person than a living, and laid me on a Bed, where I found my self as soon as I revived, encompassed with a great many People, who were very earnest to help me; amongst others there were two very beautiful Ladies that sate on my Bedside, and a Lady that seemed to be their Mother. I look't upon them with a great deal of disturbance, which Persons use to be under upon their recovery out of a swoon: Is it possible (said I) that I am yet alive? Oh how much better for me is Death than Life! Madamoiselle, said the old Lady, constituted the said of the said of the said of the old Lady of the said of the said

der I pray you, that seeing we are ignorant of what God hath determined concerning us, 'tis the Dury of a Christian to resign her self entirely to his Wil, and to follow the Example of Jesus Christi our Lord and to say with him, Not my Will, but thy Will be done.

Madam, (answered I,) I am extreamly obliged to you, for your Civilities towards a poor Stranger. who was the day before vefferdiy, happy amonest all those of her Birth and Quality, and whom you now fee to be a wandring Vagabond, ready to die under the Cruelty of her Mother, who intends to force her into a Convent : But Madam, added I. may I know to shom I am obliged for the care yeu have taken of me, for methinks you speak not the Language of Roman Carbolicks. No Madamoifelle, replyed the, neither I nor my two Daughters do. nor by Gods affiftance ever shall speak it. be the Lord, find I, that hath made me meet with Some of the Houlhold of Fairly, such as are enlightened by his Truth. Hereupon I remembred what I had heard my Father fay on his Death-bed, of the death of the Rither, of the Wiftom, and of the Kron. leage of God! How monderful are bis Judgments, on! his ways par finding of ! I have been hurried out of my Hathers House to be cast into an Ahvile, out of which I am hardly escaped; and God hath by his good Providence cast me into such Company, & were capable of returning me into the way of Life, had I firaved from it.

In the mean time the Unkle and the Nephew look's on each other with some surprize: At length the Unkle imposions of any surther delay, and vext at our discourte, Madamoiselle, said he, I believe you are now strong enough to eat, for we must go hence in two hours. And for my part, said I, I am weary of travelling by Night, and declare that I will not leave this place till the Motning. Madamois-

ielle,

tr

1

H

be

d

E

10

Ve fe

21

10

11

ne

te

2

Y

11

R

1:

17

ta

n'

2:

14

11

21

selle, said he, I stall only rell you, that I dare not transgress the Orders your Mother hath given me. Hath my Mother (faid I in a Passion,) hath my Mother commanded you to kill me with Milery and Hunger on the Road? and hath the obliged you to be my Executioner, as you have almost been all eady? I cannot (replyed he with some hear) be sour Executioner, fince I endure the same fatigue that you do, your (wooning excepted. But to tell you plainly, know, that I have Orders not to flop in any place where there are any Higona's, and I am refolved not to transgees them; wherefore, Madamoifelle, prepare your felf for your Journey, in two hours atfauthest. If you drag me hence, faid I, you shall do it by piece-meal, for I had rather dye than be any longer in the hands of fuch a I rute a you are.

0

u

The Nephew hearing this Discourse, Unkle, (said he) you must not too strictly follow the Orders, which Madam d' Ombres al gave you, who never image neithar such Acciden s would have befallen her Daughter. There are certain occasions in which we must be governed by Prudence. Monsieur Nephew, (said the old Rabburs, with a kind of sore'd smile) you are but a Young Man 'tis not your part to give Counsel, neither will I take ir. 'I will appear in the end (said the young Rabburs) who will have most thanks: Hereupon he arose and lest the Chamber for a quarter of an hour.

Whill the was out of our Company, he went into a lower Room where the Troopers were, who cat and drank very heavily, thereby endeavouring to make amends for the r former trouble. They did not tra'l observe him to that he took their Carbines and Pillols, and made the Powder that was in their Pans to wer, that twere impossible to discharge them without a Miraole. He would also have seized on their langers, but he could not first them. Having done thus, he returned towards the Chamber, and met at the Stair-head a Gentleman that said thus unto

di

T.

W.

.

p

W

T

t

П

c !

1

him: Is it possible, Sir, that this Lady is the Daughter of Monsieur a' Ombreval, formerly Camp Master, who dyed some months since? The very same, Sir, said the Nephew: It so, said the Gentleman, your Life or mine shall go, before you shall carry her any where against her Mind. There's no need of that, said the young Rabians, and if you are a Person of Honour, I desire your shiftance. Explain your self in this Chamber sanswered he, and immediately they came

both into the Chamber where we were. He found his U kle, who fill earnefily urged me to arite, I don't know what he would have done at length, but the fight of his Nephew, who came and fare at my Beds foot, flope his mouth Mad impifelle. (faid the Nephew to me) fet your mind at reil. I affure you I will dve at your feet beinge the thall offer you any Violence. I have been d'ann in to be a Partner in a base Action; I was utterly ignorant of the Defign, but now I plainly fee the injustice they have done you, I an refolved to make a reparation for a fault that I have against my Will committed. Then I am delivered creed I, with a transport of Joy, I see how God doth from time to time provide means for my abilitance. You don't know all, faid he, for Mounfigur here (thewing me the Gentleman) was about to have fought me, thinking that I had been one of your Ravishers. Immediately the Gentleman came to falute me, and made me many obliging Proteflations, whom I answered with such Civilities as were fuitable to my prefent Necessity, and as fo generous a Gentleman deferved In the mean time the old Rabours left the Chamber, and his Nephew believed that he was gone to work no ordinary mischief, which caused him to have a secret Conference with this Gentleman and another that was his Companion, a man of great honehonesty and bravery: The result was, that the Ladies were to retire into a Chamber, where they might be free from all Insules. The old Lady was afraid some mischief would be done, but Radiers assured her, that all the mischief would be some notice and a vain sear, and that he had taken sufficient care to prevent all other. They led me therefore into their Chamber, the Door of which we bolted, where instead of going to Bed, we sell to Prayers, that sod would prevent the Misery where-

with I was threatned.

ir.

ue

ny

٤.

of

We were but just gone away when the old R1ours came up the Stairs, followed by the four Troopers, with their Piffols at their Girdles, and their Carbines in their Hands, intending to carry me away by force, and to kill all that should oppole their Delign; they found the vonng Rabours, to whom the Gentlemen had lent a Pittol, which he held in one hand, with his Sword drawn in the other, and the two Gentlemen were in the fame Posture: They had left the Door open, so that they might freely enter; the old Rabners rushed in first, asking for me : She is. (faid one of the Gentlemen named Mountier d' Arbaux,) gone to her rest, with Persons of honour, with whom 'tis firter she should be than with such as you. If she comes not immediately and go with me, affare your felves that it shall cost you dear, be you what you will, especially that Traytor there, (pointing to his Nephew.) We have had to do with worse Lads than you are, said the Gentleman very boldly) and you are not fuch as we should be afraid or.

The old Rabburs staved not to return any Answer, but presenting his Pistol to his Nephews Breast, Raskel, said he, bring me Madamontelle de St. Phale, or thou are a dead Man. Unkle, replyed the Nephew pray address your self to some body else, for I would not have the honour of fighting with you. This

F . 4 .

fcorn-

ter? Answer enraged the old Rabours beyond mesfree fo that he endeavoured to have discharged his Pittol on his Nephew; but as the young Rabour knew very well before, it took not fire. However this Arresport of his Unkle fo entaged him, that he fell upon tam, if rew him to the ground, and wreft. ed his Sword cur of his hand. The Troopers en. deavoured to affift the Unkle, but the Gentlemen hindered them, which forced him to cry out, Fire you cowardly Balkals, fire upon them. They need. ed not many words to move them to this, but im. mediately accompted to discharge their Carbines, which had no more effect than if they had been load. en and primed with Shor, which made them betake the falses to their Piffols, but the thing was full the tane. The Gentlemen irritated with there affectes, gave them many blows with the this of their Swords, threw them to the ground. and god them under their Feet; all which they did with case, as having to do with Persons that were half Drunk; they a fo took from them their Carbines and Piffols: In a word, the young Ratours told me the next Morning, that there was never feen a more furious Combate without any Blood fred.

The old Rubburs, who was much more vexed for having left me, than for all the ill success of his Enterprize, knew not what measures to take: for my Mother, on whose Charity he lived, he concluded would for ever banish him her presence; and this was what he seared more than any thing else in the World. He sound the Landlady of the House, and enquired of her what the Name of the Judge of that Village was, but he happened to be from home. This mock-fight being over, as I have related it, the three Gentlemen came laughing into our Chambers, and showed us the prey they had gotten from their Enemies. After they had been with us for some time, the Old Lady said to us, Let us

not

BOC

pv 1

que

21.

Ron

25 1

And

CD

V'1

134

200

112

2 . 1

of

10

101

10

bic

1 1

An

1.21

ten

vet

us:

for ho

the

10

he

0

not laugh yet, for I am fill afraid of some unhappy issue of this business; not that those who attacqued you can do us advinjury, but Madam d'Omerical will certainly arm all the whole Church of Rame against us, to revenge this Affsont, as soon as she shall hear of it. You have no reason to sear side thall hear of it. You have no reason to sear side the florm must fall on any Body, 'twill be on the young Rabars, whom yet I hope to find a way to secure from it. Let us only consider (said Monticur d. Abars.) what course to take to morrow, for Madamoiselle de St. Phase must, if she app ove is, go with us. This offer was too advantageous to be resulted, so that I embraced it with an inv heart.

Whilft we were discoursing of these things, one of the Troopers came up to our Chamber, detiring to speak with the young Ratours, who would not hear him, but in the presence of all the Company, to which he consented, and consessed that he had been unhappily engaged in a shameful Action; and-that it he would restore his Carbines and Pistols, he would immediately retire to his own home. And why should we take your word, answered he? have we not just reason to believe, after the Attempt you have made on us, that should we deliver you your Arms, you would employ them against us: I consess, replyed the Trooper, you have reason to suspect me; but if I immediately return home, I believe you are generous enough to send them the, and in this hope I leave them with you.

Methought the Troopers offer was very reasonatie, so that I answered in Rabours his stead, that he should certainly have his Arms restored, if he would keep his Promise. I also fancyed that this Irooper might be of farther use to me; and thereore, Friend, said I) how much were you pro-

mifed for your Pains? cell me freely? Madamoifelle. (answered he) I'll conceal nothing from you: Madam your Mother promised each of us four Louis d'ors, whereof we received one in hand, besides all Charges, which were to be paid by Monfieur Aa-You know, (faid I) that not having carried me to the place appointed, you will be fruttrated of the rest of your payment, and God grant that she deal not more severely with you, for you may casily i nagine that now you shall never carry me with you, and har those who have delivered me out of the hands of Rabours, will defend me from his Violence I have rold you already, Madamontelle, (replyed the Trooper.) and I again affure you, that I'll not e any more concerned with them, but immediarely retire home : And to convince you that I truly repent of the Crime I have committed, I am ready, if occasion offer, to spend my Life in your Delence.

I thank you, said I, yet I have thought upon a way in which you may advantageoufly ferve me, withour exposing your self to any danger, and I assure you, you have realon to promise your self a better gratuity from me, than you could expect from my Mother, though you had succeeded in your project. Go to your Companions, show them the impossible lity of carrying me hence; and that confequently they must expect no further Reward from my Mother, but affure them that if they will all of them return home, they shall receive the four Louis d'on from my Brother, to whom I'll write in their fayour; and for my own part I promife you fix, befides what you may expect from my Liberality. My Companions (faid he) are fo drunk and mad, that they talk of nothing but of hurning the houle, to revenge themselves of the Affront which the have received; but were they once come to themselves, I might possibly work somewhat upon them

You may affure them, that my Brother will not fail of purious us, according to the Advice that I have given him; who, if he find them before they have made their peace with me, will deal with them

without any mercy.

Indeed, Madamoiselle, replyed the Trooper, you have brought a very pleasant Stratagem into my head, and which may have good success. Let some one of the Gentiemen that are with you, feign himfelf to be sent from Monsseur de Ponsins, and let him enquire at this house whether you are, or have been here, or any can discover where you are gone? I'll instruct the Landlady in what she ought to say, and if the Gentleman ask for you come to your Chamber-door and answer him acc r sing to his Demands. In the mean time I'll place my Companions in a place where they shall hear all that patieth, and I'll so terrishe shem with the coming of Monsieur de Ponsins, that they shall immediately take Horse and slye with all imaginable speed, leaving Monsieur Raboars

with the Coach in pawn for the reckoning.

This Device was very well approved of by all our little Affembly, and something also was added to it, and one of the Gentlemen offered to all the part of the Trooper that was to be fent out upon the Enquiry; he immediately drew on his Boots, and fitted himfelt for the Journey, and having gotten his Horse in a readiness, he went down by a private pair of Stairs, mounted, and having fercht a compais, about Day-break he returned by the High-way to the House in which we were, where being come, he defired to speak with the Landlord, upon which the Landlady appearing, Madam, (faid he) is there not a Coach lately come to your House? There are two, answered she : But is there not one, (replyed the pretended Trooper) in which is a young Lady cloathed în mourning, accompanied with two Men and a Chambermaid.

110

here

onts.

In

110

1.

m :

T

oor

med

ine

0 9

tet

oid

th

de

11

1

Thuc

maid, and guarded with four Troopers? There is fuch a one, (faid the Landlady,) but would to God I had never feen it, it hath caused such uproars in my House. What, (said he) have these People been guilty of any Diforder? hereupon the Landlady gave him a full Account of what he knew rety well before, with many pleafant Exaggerations. Madam, answered Monsteur de Chables, (for 10 was the Gentleman called,) don't trouble your felf, they thall pay for the damage they have done you; and if you have any refentment against these Wreteles, you shall have the pleasure within these two Hours to fee your felf fully revenged on them: You but jest with me, (said she.) To convince you (answered he) that I speak topcerely, know that I belong to Monficur de Ponfins, the Brother of Madamoiscile de St. Phale, who is but a little way off with a number of Troopers, whom he hath fent into all Parts to enquire for the Coach which he sceks; I have been so happy as to find it, and will now return to inform him of it. But I would first fpeak one word with Madan offelle de St. Phale, you can hardly do that Sir, (faid the Landlady,) the is in Red, and I dare not diffurb her. My Eufiness to her (said the Trooper) is of the greatest importance, hold, there's a Crown for you, do me this favour. The Landlady made him a low reverence, and readily taking the Crown, faid, the would do what the could: All thefe things were contrived before; fo that I was up, and feemed very willing to discourse with the Trooper, who came up the Stairs, taking his Piftols with him, and met me at my Chamber door. I am (faid he) beyond expectarion happy to find you and discourse with you. Your Brother is but two short Leagues off, well accompanyed: So that if you can but retard your Journey two hours, you will be absolutely delivered. I believe, (answered 1) that those who have so generafly affified me in my need, will not leave so encurable, an Action impersect, but will continue ter affishance till that time; but yet I beg you let tet be no delay. No Madamoiselle, said he, you are no need to fear that: After this he went with remounted his Horse, and returned by the my he came a swift Gallop; and having setched a rell compass came into the back-door of the House, here a Servant waited for him, pluck'd off his coss, and came up to the Chamber where we see, by the private Stairs, none perceiving any long of this farce but these that were made acquaints with it.

In the mean time Gorjov played his Game well the other hand, (for fo was the repenting Troopcalled) for he took care to make his Companihear the Dialogue between Monfient de Chables I the Landlady, and afterwards that between m and me, for we spake aloud on purpose. The adiady told me, when I spake to the pretend-Trooper, that I need not be afraid the other opers would hear me, for faid the, being drunk e Piggs, they'l fleep like Piggs. Yet they hearned very attentively, the first vapours of their ne being spent, so as they were capable of Rean and it may be of Fear. For my part, faid 170%, I'll be gone, I am not mad to wait the comof Monfieur de Ponsins, 'twill be dreadful to et him when he is in a rage: I am fure if I can and meeting him here, I shall make my peace th him; but if I should meet him here, I shall dealt worse with than I have already been. Fare-Il my Friends, I'll advise you nothing, you know wyou have to do; for my part, I am reiolved retire while I may, without staying any longer the Storm?

These words aspoken by the bravest of the four, uck them all with amazement, and made them resolve

refolve to be gone. But how that we do this? (faid one of the three) we have not only loft all hope of the four Louis d'es; but they have taken also from us our Carbines and Pult 1-: I dare not return after fuch an Afront, I had rather tarry till Monticur & Porfins comes, though I hazard my Life by it. We may do what's much better, faid Jonjou, Madamoifele de St Poale is Good and Generous, Ict's beg her Par. don, and funnit our felves to her Will, we can ger to nare by doing thus Let's go, faid the other,my mind gives me all will be well he two other Troppers ready embraced this Advice; fo that Garjos who brought them to me, and who fpake the best of the four, spake for all the rest, as near as I can remember in these words. Madamossile. fand he, here are we four pentient Crimina's, come to implore your Mercy . We confess we have done ands, and those that sedgeed us. never told us that we were to be Affiftants in 10 bale a Violence much lef ganti a Perton of your Merit. Bur though we mig v plead our ignorance for our Judification, we had rather have recourse to your Clemency, and beg you to pardon us, and we shall immediately refurn to our own homes, it you please to order ou Arms to be reffored to us.

fo

21

0

70

u

.1

1

2

,1

"

n

t

1

t

YSI

t

1

I

I would not (aid I) do you any hurt for what you have done against me, both because you were seduced, and because you never lost the respect you owed me, but he when you were not your selves, so that I pardon you with all my heart. Your Pitols shall be restored you but for your Carbines, you are not to expect them ut you are arour own homes. Prudence coligeth me to deal thus with you. I assure you also of my Brother Pardon, who will pay you more than my Mother promised you, for which I pass my word before at these worthy Persons present. They seemed very well-satisfied with what I said. After this they withdrew, and went to see the Old Raburs, who

was almost mad at this Change. They quarrelled some time about the Reckoning, but I sent them word that they should be gone, and that I would discharge it, and keep the promite I had made them. They therefore left us about fix in the Morning, it

being day all a road.

faid e of

n us

ter

41

We

elle

11.

can

my

her

1120

ice

113

ic,

ne

ne

125

CI

AC

38

nd

W

Hitherto all things went well, but the excess of my happinels had like to have caused me greater trouble than that which I had escaped. My Brother was indeed in the Country making a diligent fearch for us accompanied with Monticur de Haute-Cour. and twelve Troopers, who were all of them either of the Reformed Religion, or extraordinary Admirers of my Brother They found out the way that we lad taken, and having Guides they pailed through the Wood without loting themicives as we had done, they rode hard all Night, and were but a quarrer of a League from this tatal Village, when they met our four Troopers, who were furrounded with their twelve, and Monfieur de Haute-tour and m. Brother were about to have facilified them to their Fury; which Gonjon feeing Mensieur de Ponfin., (faid he) I eg you not to follow the first motions of your Anger, but hear me. We are going back by Madamoiselle de St. Phales leave, who is at Liberty, and hath promised us, upon Condition that we would leave her, to make our peace with you. And where is my Sifter ? (faid my Brother,) She is (continued Gonjou) in the Vulage that is before you in very good Company. If you please wee'l guide you thither. Yes (answered my Brother) you shall go with us, either treely or by conftraint; for, said he, if you have given her the least reason to complain, or have lost that respect you owed her, your Lives shall answer it. We are very well pleased (said Gonjou) with what you say, wee'l go with you with all our hearts. Hereupon they were all four placed in the midft of the t elve

Troop-

Troopers, and making what convenient haste they could towards the Village, came thither just as we were about to break our Fast, we having had no great define to eat any thing in so trou lescent Night. As soon as I heard the noise of the Horis in the Court, I looked out at the Window, and saw Monsieur de Haute-Cour and my Brother. I immediately made the greatest haste imaginable down, and ran to embrace my Brother: Ah Sifer, (siid he) are you at liberty? Yes Brother, (sied I) thanks be to God I am. At this very instant Monsieur de Haute-row came up to me, and discovered by his Joy the terrible fear he had been under of losing me, at which I was extreamly pleased

In the mean time the two Gentlemen who had fo generously defended me, together with the Old Lady and her two Daughters, came down to us: I presented them to me Brother and Lover, and gave them an account of their kindness towards me, to which they returned the most obliging answers in the World. The young Rabours thought not fit to appear with them; but I declared his Carriage towards me, which so touched them, that they were imprised till they saw him. At length he came, and my Brother and Lover affectionately embraced and thanked him for his Noble and Generous Actions, with many sincere Pretestations never to forget them as long as they lived.

All this while the Old Rabours lay upon a Bed, having his Mind tormented with a thousand cruel imaginations, he had not served my Mother according to her Expectations, and had mortally offended my Brother and me; not to mention Monsieur de Haute-Cour who had reason to be enraged with him; and his sear was increased, when he understood that my Brother, with all his Company, was come to the house in which we were. The Young Rabours intreated for him, that my Brother would

pardon

0.0

CSI

Go

m

Fri

for

0

201

wh

G

114

en

TI

1

15

d

e

d

i

1

1

pard n him : For your fake, faid my Brother, I would do harder things than this, though he hath extreamly forgot himself and his Duty ; but feeing God hath been pleafed to reftore my Sifter, I am morent to pass by all. You are at Liberty, my friends, (faid he) to the Troopers, whom he had forced to come back with him. But there's more o be done, faid I; I promifed them four Louis dors antice if they would go home, and leave me at Libery, which they did. Well Sifter, I'll add to what you have promifed them, and give each of dem Six. If (faid I) you give them fix a piece, Grow must have ten; upon which I gave him an account of the Industry and Artifice which Gonjou d made use of in serving me. I'll our bid you ence more, Sifler, (faid my Brother) he shall have twe've. But this is not all yet, faid I, I must begg your Pardon for my waiting Maid. Indeed, anwered my Brother, tis against her that I am most enraged; this Wretch to whom you have shown so much kindness, and on whom you have laid so many o'ligations, hath yet been fo wicked to berav vou, I can hardly resolve to pardon so base a Creature ; yet fince you defire ir, I will do it, however, I am resolved to terrifie her a little for my unisfuction.

As soon as we first came to this Village, this Wretch gat her immediately into the Kirchin, and ind so heartily on what first came to hand, that the heart thought on me; afterwards finding her self, somewhat sleepy, she threw her self upon a Bed, o that I saw her no more: She slept so heartily hat she heard nothing of all the disorders of the light. The People of the house showed us the lamber in which she lay, into which we should are gone, had not the Young Rabours, who went is seek his Unkle, brought him to us, parely willingly, and partly by force. He was as pale as a Male-

Malefactor, that every minute expects the stroke of Death — I perceived the Consusion he was under, and pityed him; Monsieur de Rahours, (said I to him) lay aside your fear, my Brother hath already Pardoned you, and is disposed to bestow on you greater marks of his Generosity than ever your ceived from my Mother. Hereupon my Brother

17

17

Hu:

per

ier,

mn

31

dur

Hou

ine

Live

the

Ah

Cha

di,

hou

CITE

(11

mis

di .

had

in t

con

pav

1 h

thir

to

spake to him thus :

Monfieur de Rabours, faid he, God who know the fecret of my Heart, is my witness, that I now have no grudge against you .- Tis enough for me that I fee your Defigns fru Cared, as they were unhappily conceived. What did you think when you made your felf the Instrument of my Mothers Fun, to act this Volence against my Sifter, and drag her (as it were) against her Consent into a Convent! Where were those Principles of Generofity that ought to reign in a Gentleman, when you undertook an Action that many Pefants would have abhorrd as unworthy and base? 'Tis true, you did nothing seainst the Daughter, but by the Mothers Order; but should you not have considered, that there are some Comman's which Justice obligeth us not to obey? What Fight had you in my Sifter, that you should prefume to imprison her during hersLife, a at least to long as her Mothers rigour hould endure! What benefit could you expect from this? poffin fome recompence from my Mother . But had vo not reason to believe that in time her displeasure would give place to the voice of Nature; and that when my Mother should come to her felf, she would be extreamly troubled it what the had done, and vent all her rage on these that had been too prompt and officious in ferving her in it? What a fhames it that Montieur your Nephew should teach you your Duty, and that he should be the first that was fentible of the Injury he did, in puriting a base an Enterprize? I'll say no more of this mit-

er, but I affure you for your Comfort, that you av promife wour felf more kindness from me, in ever my Mother flow'd you: And having faid my Brother gave him his hand in token of

perfes Reconciliation.

er,

to dy

a

The old Rabours would have return'd an Answer. ut my Brother perceiving the trouble he was unier, flept him, faying, I'le hear you another time. mmediately he went into the Chamber, where my and lay affeep; he had with him my Lover, fur of his Troopers, and the Landlady of the Hepfe: This Wretch was still in a deep fleep, when Brother awak'd her, pulling her violently by he Arm, Trayterous Wretch, faid he, Where's my filer? Upon this the flarted up, and was for some Enother, Where's my Sifter? unless thou wilt be immediately put upon the Rack, and have thine accursed Life torn from thee by Violence; I'le wait to longer; Ropes there, presently; I am resolved to lave the Pleasure of leeing the wickedest Creature the Sun ever faw, dye in the midit of Tormenes. Ah Mounsieur, (cryed she) she is at rest in a Chamber here by. No, Mistris, said the Landlady, you are cur in that, the went away above three hours agne, in the Coach with the Gentlemen that came with her, and the four Troopers: And why (find fine weeping) did no Body call me, that I might have gone with them? The old Mounfieur di Ribburs, replied the Landlady, told me, that he had Orders from Madam d' Ombreval, to leave you in the first Quarters they should lodge at, and to continue their Journey without you; 'ris true, they pay'd for you, to that you may go where you will. I have nothing to demand of you.

It may be (faid my Brother) you may have nothing to demand of her, but I have, I'le force her to tell me where my Sifter's gone, for the knows

the place to which they have carried her. Na Mounficur, find the, I'le fwear I know nothing of mul ir. Thou wilr not tell me, thon Wretch, (faid he) Pard bind her fast, I'le extort it from her by force: hercupon the Troopers came towards her with Ropes and red hor Pincers, which the feeing, fereeds out aloud, wepr, fell down at my Brothers Fee, embraced the Knees of my Lover, rolled her felf on ion ion the ground, tare her Hair, Curfed her Deffiny and Wickedness, which had reduced her to so much Mifery. Confess, treacherous Wretch, said my Brother, where's thy Mistress. Alas, Mounfieur, (fail the) I cannot tell: If you are refelved to kill me, vet what will it profit you to terment it e, to force me to Con'els what I do not know. I believe indeed (faid the Landlady) that the doth not know, for the Reasons I have already rold you. I am inclined to think to roo, faid my Brother, but the shall dve, the shall be hanged at the first Tree we come to, let some Body call ! Prieft to Confess her. This Sentence filled her with Despair . " Alas, my "God, (faid the) I have berrayed those that con-" fided in me, and never did me any Injury, and I " am berrayed by those whom I crusted; as I dealt " with my good Miftress so am I now dealt with: Ah, 66 Madentielle de St. Phale, Ah my good Lady, " wherever you are, I begg you to believe, that I " dve with infinite regret for having betray'd you: " Alas, you waid but two days ago, that God is juff, " and that he would reward me according to my " Deserts ; I mockt you then, but I see now its "n t good mocking any, especially those that have " the Gift of Prophecy.

Mounfieur de Haute-Cour and my Brother were forced to turn away their Faces, to higher themfelves from laughing; for my pare, I heard all from them we Chamber, which was only parted from her by a Cicling of Boards, and I laught as heartily as

CVCF

ret I did in my Life : Madam de Garde, her two Daughters, and the Mounfieurs & A-baux and de ould hold no longer, but cryed out aloud, Pardon, Pardon. Ah, cryed the Criminal. 'tis the Voice of ardon. Ah, cryed the Criminal. Its the voice of a vogood Mistres: For God's sake Madamojeve de to be some to my affistance, for I hope only in you. Look, said Mounsieur d'Abiux, you are nade a Saint while you are alive, norwithstanding on the prays with so much earnestness, you will have the Cust mers if you negled the first invocation. ta's addressed to you. I did not tarry to return the Appropriate to this raillery, but went immedia ely a Applier to this raillery, but went immedia ely 10, mothe Chamber where my Brother and my Lover ce ere. As foon as my Maid law me, the washed n-Feet with her Tears, the kiffed them, and made me W, nhundred Pravers, which I answered in a tex words. ın-I would not, faid I, speak for thee till now, behe rufe I was fure they would do thee no other In-WC by but affeight thee, though indeed I might juffly er. renge me on thee: But God orbid that I should rin lover any Animofity against any one, on a day 07which he hash miraculously delivered me out of 16 Enemies hands. I pardon thee, and I do it finealt reh, I am forry that thou hast made thy felt in-Ah, puble of living with me, 'twere a breach of Prudy, tre ever to trust thee more; but I'll give thee at I me Testimony not only of my Goodness, but also Cer: my Literality. You are my Good Mistris, anuft, end the, you can do nothing but what is Good MY Generous, I now feel my felf ferfibly touched 115 than extream regrett for having offended you, a 250 tett that will eternally abide with you. I cauher to arise from the Ground, where she lay refe hrate; afterwards the beggid my Beothers and cm-Lovers pardon; they both pityed her and gave rom Money: I also opened a Coffer which I had, hers and lv 25

CACL

and gave her somewhat of a good value, with promise that I would give her more hereafter.

During these and some other passages, dinner we ready, which if it were not very delicate in it set yet the good Stomacks which we all had, made ver the good Stomacks which we all had, made feem to be fo. There were two Tables, at the largest of which fate the fixteen Troopers, my Bro ther having firitly charged all that came with his not to fay any thing to the others about what had pa the two Gentlemen her Sons in Law, 217, the Monfieurs of Arbana and de Chables Table were Madam de Garde, her two Daughters Lo ther, and my felf, with the two Rabours. All the pallages of the last Night were buried in slence, to fear of rubbing upon those wounds which coul not yet be well healed. car

ed.

hav

fer:

wite

XC

2111

won

I di

cont

You.

DIVE

After Dinner we were much concern'd to this what course we should take, especially with respito me, where 'twas fit I should retire; and all with respect to the Old Rabours, what he should fay to my Mother, who we knew was not a Wo

man to be put off with bare pretences.

As for what concern'd me, Madam de Garde ge neroully offered me her House, where I might is MOT MOD ly make my recreat, till we should have more to fure to take new measures: This offer the made fuch an obliging manner, that I could not but a cept it. Concerning the excuse of the Old Rank 'twas thought fit that he should pretend that he is fallen fick in a certain Village, and that during his So nets, I had made my escape in a Disguise; and a they could get no News of me, notwithstrading the Diligence they used. I confess I had some pugnance at pailing in the World for a Run-and but my Brother told me that I must go out France Incognico, and that 'twas fit I should a thet, mit to what I know in my Conseignace to be made of the befor ignocent, to which at length I conferred, because my Brother and Lover approved of it, as done out

of pure necessity.

pent some time in play, so that Monsieur de Haute-

My Lover was extreamly glad to see me delivered, because he was terribly afraid least he had lost me for ever, which he would be arried me into the fatal Cloifter where I was to have been buried alive. My Joy was not, it may be, irferiour to his, though I had a greater command over my felf than he had.

Ladies (said Madamoifelle de St. Phale to the two Gentlewomen of Hamburgh.) when your time to Love is come, possibly you will excuse my Sentiments, it may you may be more excute my Sentiments, it may you may be more artificial Hypocrites than I am, in denving them. I won't tell you, faid Madamoifelle Leonora, what I would do; I believe it, added Madamoifelle de St. Plate, for it may be you would do worse than I did. Pray Madamoifelle, replyed the other, continue your Relation, and afterwards I'll answer Sid you.

I shall nor, (continued Madamolselle de St. Phale) eve you an account of all that passed between us, for there's a certain sweetness in the Discourses of such as are in Love, which cannot be found in such as are not under the power of this passion. I shall the whole Confined Leading on none but my Brother whole Confined Leading on none but my Brother whole Confined Leading on none I shall not, (continued Madamoiselle de St. Phale) thet, whose Consent I had as well as my Father's before his Decease, I was not so Coremonious with

hi Le

41

216

of

Monfieur de Haute-Cour, as I should have been, had we not been engaged. 'Tis true, one thing much troubled me, that Monfieur de Haute-Coar would not find those advantages with me, which he might have promifed himfelf, were not the Refor. med in France fo outraged as they are. I die covered my regrett to my Love, who by his fincere words convinced me, that he only minded the qualities of my Person, that would I suffer him, he would have followed me wherever I went. He would also have given me indubitable Evidences of his bideliev, but I would not receive them, fatisfy. i g y felf with his word, as he did with mine.

Our Convertation together was follong, that my Brother interrupted us, inviting us to take a little Walk. I a nediately we went into the Garden, where my Beother taking Monfieur de Hatte-Cour afide, discouried a confiderable while with him and the Old Rabars, La who discovered a great many things to him which I could never perswade him to tell me, for fear of grieving me. Thus much only I learn'd, that my Mother had refolved to leave me in the Convent duflow the greatest part of her Estate on the Jesuites, see all at the instigation of the Lather Marthur, who had made himself more absolutely than ever, Marthur, who fter of her Spirit.

This Resolution which my Mother had taken up dea against my Brother, vex't me more than all that had she had done to me, for methought 'twas horriby in the unnatural.' My Brother heard it with a great deal swe of Indisferency and (as he told me) made only this rether ply. These are the ordinary effects of Bigotty. I was which makes Perfors tob their own Children to Assentieh Strangers, especially Counterfeit and different bling Monks. My Brother thanked Rabolus for the turn Discovery, and was resolved to take such measure hat as might save his Parental Rights. At length Meet dam had hear de Haute-Cour, who understands the Myslery of the engaging mens minds, discoursed the Old Rabours and with 40 much Affection and Reason, that he made he him as Zealous for mine and my Brothers lervice, as or he had formerly been for my Mothers Interest.

The Evening we sup't together with greater cheer-in-sulness than we had discovered at Dinner. Madam the a Garde and I contracted an inviolable amity. he lodged with her in the same Bed, where she made he me give her an account in what manner, and by of what means I had embraced the Reformed Religion, py and tenderness; and exhorted me to continue in the good way into which I had entred, and to make my Declaration as soon as I could, which I had never me to do.

The next Month

he

ich

The next Morning my Brother gave our Land-Lady what she demanded: We sate out very early, 175, as we had need, because this daves Journey was of very long, so that we could not reach the Castle of Madim de Garde till 'twas Night. At our enwhich the Holy Scriptures was daily read, and the x. whole discourse was employed about such things as are high and sublime. The Lady her self took a great up deal of delight in conversing with my Brother, who had not mispent his time in the Academies. I about in this house fifteen days with much p'easure deal sweetness. Monsieur de Haute-Corr and my rether, with the two Rabours's, to the Elder of its discourse with the two Rabours's, to the Elder of its discourse and his for the Troopers they were lodged at another Plajo's At the end of this time my Brother and Lay minds turn'd to their own houses, the one whereof sear; but two days Journey, the other three from the day day day and de la Gardes Castle, promising to make again.

in a short time, and return thither. 'Twas resolved that I should some days after write a Letter to my Mother, dated from London, not so much out of hopes to re-obtain her savour, as to testifie the deference which I still had for her.

Madamoifelle de St. Phale would have proceeded farther in her Narrative, but the approach of a Danillo Vessel to that in which she was, obliged her

to deferr it till another time.

CHAP. VI.

THE little Society whom Madamoiselle de St.

Phale was pleased to honour with the Account
of her Life, being again met, she continued her

Relation in these words:

I was (faid the) in the Castle of Madam de la Garde, to whom I gave an account of all the Accidents that had befallen me, before those whereof the was an Eve-witness. This account augmented the tenderness which she and her two iliustrious Daughters had for me. I received fuch kindnesses from them as I shall never forget, and had fresh Consolations every moment. I shall not relate all that passed in my Heart, which notwith flanding the Favours I received enjoyed but little rest and quiet. 'Tis enough that I tell you, they daily invented a thousand innocent pleato divert me, as walking, hunting, Conforts ck, in which Madam de la Garde, and her inghters bare a part, together with the Genin her Sons in Law, who fung Pfalms every day ther. 11 was extreamly taken with this exerbe charmed with the force of the words fiveetnels of the Harmony, which moved read the Pfalms, and get them by heart; and to fludy the Airs for my own Confolation. But this

we tepe with when

21

th

214

afl

to

21

10

cav

tha

1.7

of i

ing

ceff

not

this Discourse of singing of Psalms, brings to my mind a singular Adventure, which I cannot but give you an Account of.

About two fhort Leagues from Madam de la Gard's Caffle, is a Mountain, famous for the large Caves that are in it : We were refolved to fee it, and to this end ordered our Dinner to be sent early in the Morning, and by Ten a Clock in the Forenoon we allo came thither. We were provided with a Tinder-box and Torches to fee thefe Caves, and only made a short Collation, referving our Dinner 'till we thould return. We entred into the Caves by the affifiance of our Torches, but before we had gone fixty Paces, going into the Mountain from one Cave to the other, the Daughters of Madam de la Garde and I began to be afraid. Madam de la Garde laught at our fear, and continued on her way 'till we came to a certain place, where there were fo many Concavities, Mat many Eccho's repeated the leaft noise that we made. The Primitive Christians, faid Masam de la Garde, Praised God in Caves and Holes of the Earth, in this we ought to imitate them, being on the Point of being reduced to the same neceffity; and having faid thus, the began to fing the 70th. Pfalm, in which we all bare our parts.

Lord, thou hast been our dwelling, thou
In Ages all our sure abode,
Effore the Mountains were brought forth,
Or thou hadst form'd the World and Earth,
From everlasting thou art God.

We made a short pause between every Verse, that we might have the pleasure of Hearing the Eccho's repeat what we had sung, which so ravisht our minds with admiration, that we began to lay aside all sear; when we had sung this last Verse,

From everlasting thon art God :

we heard a miraculous Voice that came from a Concavity aside of us, which sinished the Couplet or Stave of the Psalm, and distinctly sung this Verse—.

And wilt be ever, Lord, as now.

The fear that seized us was so terrible, that I almost wonder we had not been Converted into Stones by it: Madam de la Garde, as Couragious a Woman as she was, and our two Gentlemen, were struck dumb: But we were awaked out of this Lethargy, by hearing the Voice again, which sung the second Couplet of this Pjalm.

Thou, Lord, by thine Almighty Power
Man to Destruction dost turn,
And sayes, Mens Children turn to me,
For a thousand Years in thy sight be
As yesterday that's past and gone,
As Night-watch, or the Gorzest hour.

This fecond Singing removed the terrible apprehensions that we were under. We have no need to fear (faid Madam de la Garde) where the Praise of God are sung; And yet I Pray thee, added she, whoever thou are, be thou an Angel or a Man, to continue thy singing. The Voice answered this Request, by singing those words of the 137 Psalm,

Alas what reason can us move
To sing the Praises of the God of Love,
In such a Land where we
But miserable Strangers be?

The more we heard of this Voice, the more were

we

ti-

PG

the

be ne

> fro fai

> R

we ravishe with it. Are we (said I) in a Romannick Countrey, that we hear such Angelical Voices
in Desart Places? No, (said Madam de la Garde)
Psalms, or the Praises of God are but little minded
there, which makes me confident that here must
be somewhat very mysterious, which I have an earnest desire to discover, so that I am resolved to see
from whence this Voice comes. She had no sooner
said thus, but the Voice began again, but in so doleful a Tune, as I fancyed capable of softning the very
Rocks.

Ob Lord in mine adversity
Draw near unto my Soul, and save
It from my Cruel Enemies,
Who still me persecuted bave.

My shame, dishonour, and reproach.

Are known (O Lord my God) to thee,

Also my Bloody Enemies

And Foes, all in thy Presence be.

Reproach bath broke my Heart, and I Am full of Heaviness, I looke For Pity, but there was not one That on me any Pity took.

I fought for Confort, but I found None that would Confort me at all; Toey gave me Vinegar for Drink. And for my Meat they gave me Gall.

This mournful Voice having sung these Words, we heard no more, except some soft Groans and Sighs. I verily believe, said Madam de la Garde to me, that this is some affished Christian of our Brethren, let's go and help him. Hereupon we went towards the place whence the Voice seemed to come,

G 3 where

12

201

211

10

to

re

ve

ha

hi

D

V

2

13

fo

2

d

where we faw fomewhat like a Man, of a proper Su. ture, cloathed with such Garmetts as appeared to have been once very genreel and handlome, but fo rorn and covered with duft, that 'twas impossible for us to judge whar Stuff or Colour it was of: The Countenance of this Apparition was lean, pale, and dejeded; he had on his Head a Cap, like those that are usually worn by Polanders, which covered his grey Hairs, which were all ruffled, and a great Beard. grown quire our of Fashion, of the same colour with his Hair. In a word, every thing both in the Person and Habit of this Solitary, was extraordinary and aftonishing. We were much afraid at the fight of him, and had it not been for Madam de la Garde, who on this occasion had more Courage than the Gentlemen that accompanied us, we had certainly fled; but our Fear vanished as foon as we heard him begin to Discourse with Madam de la Garde.

Bleffed be God, faid he, that being confined to this Cave for the rest of my days, God hath been so give me the sight of some good Christians, that have not bowed the Knee to the Roman Idols, nor been partakers of their abominations: Indeed, added he, I had forgotten what Joy means, before I say you, but now my Heart is full of it, for I see that God hath not forsaken me, seeing I am visited by Persons that fear his Name,

and call on him in Purity and Truth.

Good God, replyed Madam de la Garde, without making any other reflection on what he faid, methinks I should know your Voice, which much refem les that of a Man of great worth of our Religian; who hath been for some time lost, and was thought to be made away privately, fince none could give any Account of him. She spake these last words so low, that none but the Solitary could hear them. I believe, Madam, answered he, that you know me, for I know you very well, you are Madam

ta.

6

ar

14

nist,

and Constancy to all those of the Religion, and I am— 'Tis enough, said she, interrupting him, not suffering him to tell who he was, because of the Lacqueys that were present, and bare the Torches: After which she took him aside, and they discoursed together a large hour, during which we visited several of the little Caves, in which we found nothing of Curiosity; so that we came back as soon as we heard that Madam de la Garde had ended her Conversation with the Solitary, whom she earnessly invited to cat with us; but he excused himself very handsomely, and with much Civility, and returned to his dark Habitation.

As foon as we were out of the Cave, and Madain he la Garde had fent away the Lacqueys, about fome little bufiness: You would never think, (my Children) faid she, that this poor Man I discoursed with but now, was not only famous once for Zeal, Piety, Vertue and Charity, but also for his Riches and Reputation. We may truly fay, that he was the support of such poor men as were persecuted for their Religion: Such as were spoiled of their Estates he maintained out of his own; such as their. Enemies endeavoured unjustly to oppress he defended; the Afflifted found a great deal of Comfort from him. He made good his Ground for a long time against Doftors, Great Men and Soldiers, against Priests and Monks. When the greatest Tempest began to arise again't us, and the Pastor of his Church being terrified with the Apprehensions of Danger, left it to the Diferetion of the wild Boars of the Forrest, he alone stood fast, and bear the shock of all the Asfaults that were made upon this poor Flock. Insomuch that the Rage of the Enemies of the Truth against him grew so great, that the least Injury they did him was to take his Estate from him. He was forced to flye from his home, and to wander many G. 4. days

Adams in continual danger of being feized and min ed. In the mean while the Members of his Church were feattered, many of them fled, fome into # land, others into England, and some that were in found revolted from the Truth. For his part le was resolved not to tarry in France, but to retire into Germany: And whilft the Clouds were ga her ing, and the Tempest, with which he was at last over aken, was at a distance, he gathered a prem good fumm of Money, which he took with him retolving to go directly for Germany, accompanied with a very hone ff, fairliful young Man; but being for eather incommoded on the way, in a place remote from all Habitation, he faw these Caves, and retired im them; but 'twas not long e're this folitude to which necessity had at first forced him, began to please him, to that he resolved to spend the rest of his days in it. He found conveniences beyond his Expediation, as certain Steps that lead up to the top of the Rock, where he chose his Lodging in a place that's dry and wholeiome, whereas the Air of the lower part of the Cave is moift and choaking. As for his provisions the Young Man that's with him, goes from time to time to buy them for him. But wee'l speak more largely of him another time; confider 'tis late, and if we intend to dine to day, 'is thir to begin.

In the mean time the Lacqueys took care to spread our Provisions on the Grass, so that we dined after the Tarbih Mode: And we should have been much inclined to Mirth and Pleasure, had not the surprizing adventure of the Solitary made ut serious. 'Tis indeed so rare a thing for Persons of the Resormed Religion to retire from the World, after this manner, that one Example may pass for a Miracle. You wonder at this, said Madam de la Gards, for my part I don't at all. They use us as they formerly did the Primitive Christians; and is it strange

Í

if fo

retii

the

Refe

10

110

the

tary

the

ing

cal

oth

10

fiat

62

que

15 1

Ea

10

lov

ch

be

in

of

qu

W

CO

0

CI

ct

81

V

1

if some amongst us imitate those holy Persons, who retired into Desarts, and holes of Rocks? May not the same Calamities inspire Persons with the same secolutions, how ridiculous soever they may seem to the Men of this World.

Dinner being ended, Madam de la Garde sent Monsieur d'Arbaux, and Monsieur de Chables into the Rock, to see if they could meet with the Solitary, with whom she earnestly desired to have another Conference. They soon met him, for he hearing their voice, and even what they said, (the voice easily running from one end of the Rock to the other,) came to them, and had the complaisance to meet us at the entrance of the Cave, notwithshading the disorder he was in. Madam de la sait, as soon as as she saw him, sent away the Lac-

quevs, and begun a discourse with him thus.

if it

.

h

at

2

to

h

ic

15

۲.

of

e

ie

15

n,

10

15

0

1.

re .

30

.

e

11

1.

-

e

ıť

Tis not without Reason, said she, that Truthissaid to be found in the Desarts and Caves of the
Earth, whilst falshcod too often establisheth her abode in the Palaces of Kings; since we see such aslove the Truth, both in Faith, and in Discourse,
chuse the most savage places to dwell in. It may,
be, replyed the Solitary, that Truth would be found
in the Palaces of Kings, did not the greatness
of its splendor offend them, and disturb their
quiet, they would not have its beams so near; nor
would they be told, that after all they are but men,
composed of the same materials, and as necessarily
obnoxious to Death as others are. How much less
cun they endure to be told of their Vices, Debaucheries, Impersections, Insidelity and Falshood.

Do us the Favour, said Madam de la Garde, to give us an Account of the Morives that have obliged you to embrace so strange a kind-of-Life as that you now lead: That I shall willingly do, answered her the first was the deplorable Estate of our Churches. I seckon their Estate deplorable, not only be-

G

cause

cause of the Persecutions they suffer from without but because of their own Infirmities and Failures. I will not (Madam) at the Saint, nor make any Pi-Aures to Holiness; for I account my felf a great Sin. ner, vet were I not able to behold the Universal Corruption of Manners amongst us, without being filled with Horror and Amazement: Alas, we have imitated the Children of this World, and in some respects have out-done them too; Pride, Luxury, Diffolureness, have abounded amongst us, as amongst the Heathen; we have offered Incense to our Revenge, our Animolities, our Coverousness, and our Ambition; yea a great part of our Pastors have followed the same Course. Alas! Ladies, alas Gentlemen, (added he with a deep figh) is not this cause enough for a Man to wish for a place far from fo scandalous a Society? yet not making any Schism in the Faith, or Worship that we profess.

How often have I faid with the Prophet Feremiah, O's that I had a Corrage of Travellers in the Wilderness, there mould I abide, and there would I bewait the fins of the Daughter of my People. I would indeed have done so, had not my Conscience told me, that 'twas no time to make a Retreat when we are called to the Combare; no time to hide our felves when we ought to show our selves to them that are weak in the Faith, to be to them Examples of Constancy and Perseverance. I flayed therefore in the World, out of a defign of ferving others; I made use of this time to warn, both Confistories, Pastors, and People, that a dreadful florm was gathering, which would fall upon us e're we were aware: But I was accounted a Phanatick, a Visionary, a Dreamer, a fale: Prophet, an Enthusiast, and what else they pleased; yea, men were so far from believing me, that they laugh'd at what I faid.

On how willingly would I have spent all my Blood, that I might not have been a rrue Prophe.

of

of

her

no

tut

17

17

to

th

h

T

11

a

of the Defolation that's come upon us! But had I been filent, that could not have prevented it. 'Tis not without very good reason that the Holy Scripture calls men fometimes brutish, sometimes mad and Foolish; for although they are told, that the danger is inevitable, that the hand is lifted up to firike the deadly blow, unless they repent, yet they will still persevere in their Iniquities, and add to the measure of their Crimes; they are not content to walk leifurably to their ruine, but run headlong into it; and any one that did but feriously consider their actions, would imagine that they were afraid they should not be miserable soon enough. have feen our Miferies coming upon us by degrees. We have had time to have prevented them by our Tears and Repentance, and yet we have been fo brutish, so besotted, as that we have neither wept nor repented.

At length those evils that threatned us are come upon us, and have as it were seized us by the Throat when we least expected them. Our Churches are demolished, and our Religious Assemblies interdicted in a thousand places where they were before free. In a word, you know your selves all that hath befallen us, so that there's no need that I should make such a doleful recapitulation of it. How often have I longed for Death, and envied the condition of those that are at rest in the Lord! How often have I accounted those happy that are gone home before the coming of our Anguishes! or those whom Death surprizing in their Cradles, hath prevented from seeing those Afflictions wherewith we are

at present continually exercised !

Was not this enough to make me hate the world, and retire into some Desart where I might shed tears in abundance, without fear of contradiction? For the Cruelty we are at present under, is so great, that our very tears are made Crimes. We are per-

fecuted

secuted and dare not say so, nor make use of the term Persecution, or Persecutors. We must look p'easantly in the midst of Torments, and the bate saying that we are under Afflictions, and groan under them, is enough to make us accounted bad Subjects: For my part, having my heart sull of Grief, I was forced to leave all commerce with men, and to seek in the thickest Forrests and darkest Caves, a place where I might freely complain of our Mileries.

But that that was the immediate cause of this Vo-Inntary Retreat, was a Journey which I made to Court, about the Affairs of our Churches, and my own. I faw fuch abominable Corruptions there, as were not exceeded under the Regency of Katherins de Medices, who brought the Italians to all on this great Theatre of Europe, who filled the Court with the most horrible Vices that were ever heard of. What vile Discourses did I hear from the highest Nohility of the Kingdom, both at their Tables, and in their Walks, about their horrible and unuatural Debaucheries. Ordinary Vices are at present accounted Vertues, while fuch Crimes are perpetrated, as have formerly brought Torments of Fire and Brimstone from Heaven upon a People; not to speak of those horrible Blasphemies that are daily heard, such as the Devils themselves could never have invented, and a thousand other Villanies which I shall not name, and would to God I had never heard.

I was one day thinking upon these things, when a Geneleman came to make this Proposal to me, That if I would abandon the Heresie of Calvin, and submit my self to the true Catholick, Apostolick, and Roman Church, I should not only preserve mine own Estate, but should also be advanced to extraordinary Dignitics. He that made me this Proposal, was one of the greatest Debauchees of all the Court: He present much to a Complyance,

reme

rible

his

nou

ed I

he o

mea

200

ועווב

one

fuic

thel

T

whe

ter.

he

F.36

dea!

Sub

fuli

nhi

ger.

Oh

upo

that

mv

greathe

for

for

foe

fou

the

the

01

me

TCI

remonitrating that the advantage was very confiderable, and that twould be my Frudence to embrace this offer, whilft the Court was in so good an Humour. Though I were a Catholick already (answered I) yet I would turn Protestant, that I might not be of a Communion of which you are: What's the meaning of this, (added I) that you, who believe not in God, should exhort me to turn Catholick? I assure you, (said he) that the King will have but one Religion in his Kingdom, and that such as resolute to Conform to his Will, in embracing the Catholick Religion

The King. (faid I, interrupting him with an heat whereof I was not Mafter) the King would do better, and act more for the advantage of his State, did he purge it of an infinite number of Debauchees, Elasphemers, Atheists, and such like Trash, than by dealing so severely with so great a number of good Subjects, who are guilty of no other Crime but re-

fuling to go to Mass.

These words were too fincere for the Age in which we live, and also exposed me to much Danger, against which I had no other defence but flight. Oh how much fafer is it at present for men to reflect upon the Conduct of the Almighty God, than onthat of the Kings of the Earth! Every body knew my Accuser to be one of the most Prophane, the grestest Blasphemer, Atheist and Debauchee of all the Court: Yet he had never received any check for his disorders, never was in the least punished. for them; but I, a poor Huguenet, could no fooner speak a true and righteous word, but I presently: found a Million of Enemies arm'd against me: On the one hand, all the Libertines and Debauchees of the Court were enraged against me, for presuming to reprove their way of living; these falfly accused me for speaking irreverently of the King and Government: On the other hand, the Society of the 1chuites

Jesuites were resolved to ruine me, making it a point of Honour to do so, as being a most dangerous Heretick, whom 'twas fit to rid the World of, in order to the accomplishing their Designs on others.

Yet I remained very secure at my own lodgings, never imagining that I was pursued with to much surely; the terriblest of all disgraces was just ready to overtake me, when I did not in the least suspect it; but a Billet that I received from an unknown hand awaked me out of this security, the Contents of it were these:

A S foon as you half have read this Billet, be gon without delay; so formidable a Party is form't again't you, that were you a Prince of the Blood, you must needs fall under it: Of all the Country's in the World, none is so dangerous for you as France, and of all the Piaces in France none can be more fatal to you than Paris. If you are discovered here, I account you more miserable than if you were cast into the depth of the Sea. Farewell: Make we of these few words.

This (continued the Solitary) was a terrible Biller; yet having made it my business to prepare my mind for the most cruel Events, I was not much surprized at the greatest Threatnings. I prepared my self for my departure with all imaginable Secrecy, taking leave of my most intimate Friends, and returning to my Lodgings Incognito, where I staid some time, 'cill I could receive a Summe of Money, which I kept against a time of need, and 'till I had hid some Papers of great Importance; which having dom, I resolved to leave France as soon as I could, accompanied only with a young Man, in whose Virtue and Fidelity I entirely consided.

I don't deny but 'twas forme trouble to me to

they

they

ret

Refe

075

loke

mo

1 111

fon

cut

1

nev

abo by

fit

101

me

ha

Cri

WI

pri

bo

ev

pr

110

T

or

m

tu

be

th

h

To

H

t

t

they make Projection of the same Religion with me, tet it may be have no more Vertue or Piery than the Resormed in France: And I know by several relations which I had from several Persons yet alive, their lakewarmness and indifferency with respect to the most pure religious Worship: But what should I do? I must either resolve on Death or perputual Imprisonment if I staid in France; or else leave it to se-

cure my Life, or at least my Liberty.

g-

1

In a Town which I passed through in my Journey, dwelt a good Man of the Reformed Religion. above fourfcore and ten years of Age. I knew him by report, as he also knew me, and therefore thought ficto vifit him in my way, and defire his Advice. If I were of your Age (faid he) I would do as tou do. I would as carefully flye France, as Seamen do the Coasts of Algiers and Tunis: Oh how happy are those that leave an honse that's full of Cracks, and which every blaft of wind threatens with ruine. But Monfieur, replyed I, France is at present in so flourishing a condition, that it gives Laws to all Europe, its power makes all her Neighbours trembles: But, (answered he) what more evident and certain Tokens can you defire of approaching Destruction, than the Universal Corruption that reigns in it, from the least to the greatest? Thin that infolent Pride, and that cruel perfecution which is afted against the Faithful. Affure your felf. my Son, that one of these things bath formerly overturned Empires, that were more iliustrious in their beginnings and rife, than France can everyhope to be in the height of its Grandure. Much more reason hath a State in which all those three things are found, to believe its ruine to be at the Door.

These words, said the Solitary, pierced my Hearr, especially when the good Old Man added this: You know, said he, that the Holy Scripture tells us, that the Judgments of God begin at his

own house. There's no truth more fully confirmed than this is, by innumerable and most Authenrick Examples, whereof we have feen fome with our own Eves. God inflicted his Rod on our Churches in the times of our Fathers, which were miferably ra vaged and defolated; but when their Tival was over, God at length avenged filmfelf on the Enemies not only on the Heads and Authors of their Miseries, but allo on all the People, punishing the Children for the Iniquities of their Fahers When God had executed his Judgments on his Church in the days of our Ancestors, who wereesposed to Massacres and Eurnings; he turned his hand against our Enemies, and by a just Decree we law France punished by her felf, for the Cruck. ties the had committed; and there was no confiderable Town in which Innocent Blood had been thed, but was exposed to the terrible stroaks of Plague, War, and Famine, and those who had most erved out against the Hugonots, were the first that employed their Force and Cruelty against their own Country, and at length God cast these Rods of his Anger into the Fire. 'T had been but a small thing if only the Authors of our Misery had fuffered, all France was involved in the fame punishment, in the same Indignation of God.

Be confident of this, that the Corruption, the Infolence, and the Perfectution of the Clergy of France against our Churches, hath a fixed Period, which when it is once come, the long-suffering of God will be at an end, and hee'l no longer bear with the Oppressors of his Saints, the Blasphemies of his Name, and the Contemners of his Glorg. As for this term which God hath fixed, which must expire before hee'l execute his Justice, none knows it; for there are some Wretches to whom God puts a stop in the beginning of their Cariere, and there are others whom he gives a longer scope and space.

and

27

he

es

27

67

mi

200

th

kn

51

11

We

11

19. for

20

Go

Vi

lea

an thi

my

an

de 1

C

60

lar cil

in:

and scems to have forgotten them, but in the end he will find them, so as to render the Vengeance he

executes upon them, glorious.

ed

K

110

10

12

of

ng is.

135

X-

115

te

.

6-

77

of

ft

at

11

15

d

1-

16

of

d,

16

cs

v.

15

ts

e

C,

But not to amuse my self with Arguments, to prove what I fav. I exhort you to remember, that every wife Man, if he carefully confider the matter, must the our of France. Our Kingdom is ficker than we imagine, and the time in which we may think it to be above all fear, may be for ought we know the very moment that God will take to humle it; and if once he lay his Rod on the French, afure your felf, the stroke will not be light, or it's duration fhort. As for you, my Son, you do well to retire betimes, and to imitate those Birds, who forefeeing a hard feafon, prepare themselves against it by changing their Habitations. Go therefore, and the Lord go with you, for my part I am going the way of all the Earth, and I hope that God will be fo gracious to me as to take me out of this World, before he executes his worst and last Vengeance upon us.

When I had (added the Solitary) taken my leave of my Old Man, whose words made so great an Impression on my Spirit, that I could not but think on them day and night, I happen'd to lose my way for want of minding it, and found my felt before the mouth of this Cave, into which a hard and long rain forced me to enter, without any other deign but that of freltering my felf from the Storm. I found in it an honest Conurry-man, who was ome thither out of the same Defign. He rold me to many curious things concerning the Cave, that I had a great mind to fee it, and promifed him a large recompence if he would accompany me: My offers engaged him, and he immediately remrned into the Village where he lived, (which is but a quarter of a League hence,) and brought back with him fome Torches, together with a Tinder box,

and also a line, which if there were any need the ans might maice use of, as Thefeus did of Ariadnes thread,

1

c

1

lea

his

o le

dive

Bunt

Devi

I

100

ett

ent

ery l

dre

ght make use of, as Theseus did of Ariadnes thread.
With these Provisions we entred the Cave, which we vifited on both fides, at length he showed mea way where we faw the print of mens feet, wefol lowed this track, and by a kind of Private String which Art affifting Nature had made, we, after m. ny turnings, came to the top of the Rock, which we found open, and sufficiently light. To this open place there was a door, which being thut fecured it place there was a door, which being that fecured in 2 sagainst the injuries of the weather: There were also assets other less holes, which were beaten out to admit the light, I imagined that this had been the Habitant tation of some Hermite, that was weary of the world as I were, and had fitted this place for his Accommodation. The Country-man confirmed me in this Opinion, and told me, that he had heard his Grandfather fay, That a Man who had the Reputation of great Holiness had formerly dwelt there.

Immediately I had a Fancy, which the World it may be will judge somewhat extravagant. I resolv. ed to try whether I could bear such a kind of Life as the Ancient Hermites led : I communicated my Defign to the Country-man, who in all his Difcourses seemed more civil and judicious than such efer People ordinarily are. I gave him ten Crowns, and conjured him to affift me; besides I promiled him a double or treble Reward for all the prins he should take for me, and he ravished with his happinels, promifed to do any thing that I should commind him. This Night I lodged at the Village of where he dwelt, and told him all that I would have

him do for me.

He prefently apprehended my meaning, and being an Industrious Man, returned the next Morning e a with me to the Cave, where he rook measure of the Door, Windows, and the place for the Bed and wrought to hard, with one of his Company

ns, that at the e'ad of two days he returned to put d. In the things that he had made, and fixed a Lock ich my Door. It a word, he wrought fo well, that had no reason to complain of the cost : Besides. had no realog to complain on, and promised to bought me divers Provisions, and promised to teep my Counsel Inviolably, and in this he hath een as good as his Word. He constantly comes nice a week to fee me, and if at any other time I the that I am as well furnished with all Convenien-

in.

m.

ich

It may per ible feem very rude and fevere for a nit in mitolive as I do, separated from the whole world, and from the Company of Friends: But 'tis no fuch in loth once give up his Spirit to Prayer, to the Praito Heafures, as we can never comprehend whilst we remained in the Affairs of the World. As for re entangled it the Affairs of the World. As for it his Young Man who is obstinately resolved never o leave me, he suits his Inclinations well enough with mine, nor old I contradict him in his Innocent diversions. I su fer him to enjoy the Pleasures of lunting and Wa lking, as well knowing that when Devotion is not free, 'tis of no value, and doth not after the name of Devotion.

I hever found the least inconveniency by this ex-

reordinary change of Life and Lodging, which I tribute to God; particular affiftance. I never reteted my past enjoyments, if any thing afflicts four Churches, and the confideration of their preen misery. One day, as I happened to be thinking ery seriously on this, I fell into so prosound a sleep, that dream's a Dream, which for its rarny I shall never e able to forget, no more than another which I ad some days affect. I should, did I not fear bene tedious, relate them to you. You are fo rare

ad N

120

WI

a Person, replyed Madam de la Garde, that you nitte cers very Dreams must have something Mysteria

This Confideration induced me to recreate a mind, by painting in Enigmatique Tables, the pre Th teme fent Stare of our Churches and our Enemies, in terliping, that I may one day have an opportunity of put them into such hands as may make them par his lick; and that these Pictures may be of some user start such as see them. How, said Madam de la Gui okt were you a Painter too; Yes Madam, answered but to I were formerly, with indifferent good success, though the curbed mine Inclinations, judging it fit, that a Man which hath more Noble and Important Employments, should be only use this as a diversion. I had indeed left the uses land the Pencil for above twenty years, but fince I be came a Voluntary Hermite, I reassumed this End to ployment to have a sensible Idea of my Meditarion as I would desire you to see my Study; but since the way is troublesome, and indeed dangerous, I'll a my self and setch what I would show you. Here also my here after returned to me bringe after returned to me bringers after the aft time after returned to us, bringing with him fever he Pictures rolled up together.

The first that he showed us, was the Prospect com a plain Countrey, in which were nothing but In ples, ples, very simple, and without Eelts. Some of the were flanding, others were half rained, and of othe oct we could hardly differn the place where they had of un flood. Over against those Temples that were en standing, we saw several Batteries of Cannons, and Equipage of the Cannoneers was very pleasant, his some had Mirers like Abbots, others had example the gant Garbs like Monks, and very many of the had three cornered Caps like Jestites. But the worse rather employed about the Eombs and Min the had three cornered Caps like Jethites. But were rather employed about the Eombs and Min than about the Artillery. Amongst all those English and the But when a special cape when which a second cape when the second cape w ries there was one Principal one, upon which

Way

ritten, The Great Battery Royal; the Mafter-Canores were known to resemble the Father la Chaise, ad Mounsier the Arch-Bishop of Pais.

The second Picture represented a Woman, that

tened to have been very beautiful, but Affliction had terly defaced a great part of her Beauty; the was terly defaced a great part of her Beauty; she was fa dark Complexion, and out of her Mouth came its Writing, Look not upon me because I am black, easile the Sun hath looked upon me: Her Garments took as though they had once been very rich, but they were now all rent and torn; in her hands teheld a great Book, whose Title was, THE WORD is GOD; several Persons endeavoured to snatch its Book from her, and tare it in pieces; but an land came out of Heaven, and smote them on the Fingers with a little Rod, forcing them to let to their hold: Above the Head of this Woman as written, The Pourtraist of the Christian Resormed the each.

The third Picture represented a Tempest, so ex-

The third Picture represented a Tempest, so ex-The third Picture represented a Tempest, so ex-tended well, that the bare sight of it was enough fill any one with terror, herein supassing most the Pictures; the Winds were drawn with swoln aces, blowing with such imperuosity, that the Sea at the send to be nothing but moving Monntains. I be beeved that these Winds were drawn much as the fame manner as they are described by the octs, except that some of them had Miters, Hats, or use Caps, and Hoods; I perceived that one of exem had a tripple Crown, who blew with all imanable carnestness, but produced not half the effect thich another did that had a three-corner'd Cap: the midst of all this Tempest was a small Vessel, which were three or sour Persons, she was withares, blowing with such imperuosity, that the Sea the midst of all this Tempest was a small Vessel, the which were three or sour Persons, she was with-the toars, Sails, or Rudder, and round about her was the ritten thus, Saveus, we perish! and in another Writ-Ban 8 which came from a certain place of the Hea-h was, which was perfectly clear, were these words, wri

T

he

lin

W

he

ua'

ar

vii: Fr

Th

eep

CIAC

hun

bod

ble

efen

10

ings,

Picure

Why are ve afraid, O ve of little Faith ?

This third Table (faid I) feems more obforthan the two former. This Veffel which you in Rian reformed Church: This Temperature Services flian reformed Church: This Tempefluous Seam the People and Nations of the Earth, who are the Holy Scripture fet forth under the Notion of abundance of Waters, which move not of them felves, unless agitated by the Winds, which make them roat and pass their bounds; for the People would never so violently rise up against the Church did not the Pope's Cardinals and all the Clere continually perswade them, that the most merito rious Action they can do, is to rid the World of those whom they call Hereticks. As for the Vefe it felf, 'ris the Church, in which are the true Be-er lievers, who yet are not perfectly freed from them mainders of Unbelief, so that seeing themselves in danger, they cry out, Sare us, we perish: Eut what Jesus Christ said to St. Peter, may be very well applyed to them, O thou of little Faith! why art thu afraid? Indeed, did we as firmly trust on Divine Affiftance as our Fathers did, we should no more than they want this Affillance.

The fourth Picture represented a beautiful and great Leopard, who having been a long time keet took chain'd, had at length broke his Chains. Wealls faw many Hunters, who did all that possibly the m, could to take him. Most of these Hunters were de ther cloathed in the Habits of Jesuites, or at least bare some Marks of their Devotion to that Order some of them spread their Nets to ensnare him others compounded Mixtures to stupisie him, and cast him into a sleep, but none durst venture to put the Chain about his Neck, which was in a retained diness to this end, for this diness to this end, for this dangerous Beaft be strangled some of the Hunters and Dogs that durt come near him. You'l eafily imagine what this

cure fignifies, added the Solitary, when you unrestand that this Leopard is nothing else but the Kingdom of England, which the Pope and fuites passionately desire to reduce to its form-

Slavery.

The fith shewed us two Fantastical Pictures: he first represented a very beautiful Woman in I respects, which had a Crown on her Head, and Scepter in her Hand; she wore a Gown of blew atin, Embroidered with Flower-de-Luce's of Gold, it twas covered with a kind of Cloak of black loath, which reached down to the ground, having little Collar, like that worn by the Jesuites; On was this Inscription, France is become Jesuite. The other Figure is a Jesuite, cloathed in his protest Habit, except that instead of the Cloak they was, he had a Cloak covered over with the control of the Cloak they was, he had a Cloak covered over with the control of the Cloak they was, he had a Cloak covered over with the control of the Cloak they was the become French to make themselves Massers France.

The fixth Figure represented the present Pope, seeping bitterly at the Diminution of his Authoric. He had with him some Cardinals, who eneroused to Comfort him: He was preparing the hunder of Excommunication against France, who specied it with the greatest Scorn in the World; hich obliged the Popes Friends to remonstrate to m, that 'twould be in vain to have recourse to e rigour of his Bulls, in a time when the World as no longer assaud of them, which induced the tood Father to lay them asside 'till a more savouble opportunity. In the same Picture was restricted how the Jesuites abandoned the Intestigation of the Pope, to adhere to that of France, as ing the strongest; nor will they now any longer aintain their old Maxime, That Popes might depose intain the population of their Subjects from their Oath of Alkings, and free their Subjects from their Oath of Alkings, and free their Subjects from their Oath of Alkings.

t

C

S I

h

10

0

F

fo

21

m

no

th

lit the the

du W

up

afri

nh

the

hav

nh

ple.

the

on

ico

are become more Orthodox, but because they see the Affairs of the Popes to be in so desperate a Condition, that they can never hope to get an

thing by them.

The seventh Figure represented Justice and Peace flying out of France with the Resormed Religion, which were succeeded by a very dark Fog, out of which came Lightning and Thunder in abundance. We saw also an hand coming out of Heaven, pouring down a mighty Hail, which ruined the hopes of the Labourers, and caused a dreadful Desolution in all the Country: This Figure had this Inscription, Thus shall that Nation be dealt with that tramples Divine Favours under its Feet.

Madam de Brosses, the Aunt of Madamoiselle de St. Phale being seized with a light Indisposition, caused a considerable Trouble to all the Company, especially to her Illustrious Niece, and obliged her to deferr the Prosecution of her Agreeable

Narranve 'till another time.

CHAP. VII.

The Company being again met and sate, Madamoiscelle de St. Phase thus continued her Relation.

I think, faid she, I was the last time Discoursing of the Pictures which the Solitary show

ed us.

The eighth Figure represented some Shepherds who made a league with the Wolves against creatin peaceable Sheep, whom the Shepherds deprived of the best Pasture, and would not suffer to drink of the clear Springs of Water, but would oblige them to seed on certain bitter and whelsome Herbs, and to drink of stinking Water

ce

ice on,

out

c1.

the

ful

rad

ich,

de

00,

p1-

ed ble

In another part of the Table we faw the Shepherds, shearing, killing, and devouring the Sheep: we observed certain Sheep that would not hear their Voice, which fo enraged the Shepherds, that they brake down their Folds, and abandoned them to the Diferetion of the Wolves, who made a cruel flaughter amongst them. In another part we faw the Wolves, who having no more Sheep, fell upon and devoured the Shepherds themselves. This is in my Judgment, faid I, a very mysterious Emblem. I'le explain it to you, replyed the Soharr: Their Paftors are the Romish Bishops, the term Bishop fignisying a Pastor; the Sheep in geperal are their Flocks, whom they deprive of the Food and Water of life, which are only to be found in the Holy Scripture; the unwholfome Herbs and flinking Waters are the Traditions and Dogma's of the Church of Rome; the Sheep that will not hear the Voice of these strange Shepherds, are the Reformed, who look upon them only as Hirelines and Robbers. The Bishops being enraged that these Sheep will not own them, break down the Sheep-fold themselves, and abandon them to the Wolves, which are the Festites, who soon reduce them to the extreamest misery: But these Welves finding no more Sheep to devour, fail upon the Bishops themselves and devour them. after having made them suffer a million of Evils. which will fooner or later force them to repent their Cruelty against the Resormed, and their having affifted the Jesuits in ruining them.

The ninth Picture showed us a great Crucifix, which was presented to a multitude of poor People, who turn'd away their heads from it, that they might neither adore, nor so much as look upon what they called a subject of Idolatry; but as soon as some Crosses of Gold and Silver stamp't up-

H

on Money were shown them, they were presently vanouished, and did all that they were defired, all of them except some old People, on whom the Croffes of Gold had no more Influence than those of Iron: upon this Picture was written in great let. ters. THE TRUE MIRACIES OF THE CROSS FOR THE CONVERSION OF HERETICKS. In ano. ther part of the Table we faw the Sieur de Marian Intendant and Great Converter, or at leaft his Siz. tue, which the Jesuires had erected in some of ther houses, he was surrounded with Dragoons, Treasurers and Miffionaries, and there was carried before him. as the Crofs useth to be before Legates, a Purfear the end of a Staffe, and large Patents, which promifed fuch as should be Converts the Purse for this Life, and Paradife for the other; for the perfer. mance of which the Intendant himfelf would become Surety; but neither he nor his words were much regarded. We law also how the Seur de Marillas lut. fered as it were by way of Pastime, his Dragoons to torment the poor Country Higgs to, to force then to go to Mals. We faw at a diltance the Sieus Mailabourg and Soulier, like two Alles in a Quagnire, very built employed about the Justification of the Intendants Conduct, or at least endeavouring to flot out the remembrance of it, but all their time and pains were to no purpofe.

The renth Figure represented a great Fire kindled in the presence of abundance of People, in which was a famous Book, Entireled, The Critique General of the Horry of Calcinitie. The fire was kindled and manufained by the Jeliaites, and this poor Book was cast into it with a great deal of Romp and Ceremony, all to appeale the wrath of an angry old Fellow, which was the Seur Mainbourge: But though the Book was burnt, and its ashes thrown into the Air, yet it still appeared with this lateration, O ye Fools and Diffracted, think you to diffe

€:

E

th

q

the Trate by burning of Books? At the same time we saw this same Book fall down from Heaven, and was, with several others, carefully gathered up and preserved, at which those that lighted the Fire seem-

ed out of their fenfes, with rage and Fury.

he

Ne

tt.

R

0-

7

1

1.

n

The eleventh Figure showed us an Old Man, with a fad and discontented Countenance, fitting in his Study. The Solitary told us that 'twas the famous Arreal. Do you see this Old Man, (said he)? he endeavours to make his Conscience truckle to his Intereft : He must of necessity resist the Jesuites, and oppose the Haganots, and the different method he is forced to follow, entangles him cruelly. Befides, he is very far advanced in years, and his Life hangs by a fingle thread, so that he dreads at once the Indignation of the King, and of God, and would fain escape both, but he finds himself under a necessity of being hated of the one or the other. Indeed it goes hard with him with respect to both, for both he and the whole party of the Jansenists are disgraced, and God cannot be well pleafed with fuch as are lukewarm Neuters or Timerous. Above his head were written thefe words, taken out of the second Epistle of Sr. Peter, and that of Sc. Jude. This is a Fountain without water, a Cloud driven about with every wind, a Tree without fruit, whose fruit, if he hath any, is corrupt. In a few moments it fhall be cut down, and caft into the Fire, the blackness of Darkness is eternally reserved for 177

The twelfth Picture represented somewhat very like to what is written in the seventeenth of the Revelations, for we saw a Woman holding a Cup in her hand, encompassed about with the Kings and Princes of the Earth, and vast multitudes of People; she obliged them all to drink of this Cup, which made them quite other Persons than they were before: Some of them seemed to be in an extasse, others grew supply, some grew mad and outragious, all in general

H 2

forgot their Duty to God, to their Countrey, and to themselves, asing a thousand Cruelties against the beloved of God; over her head was written these words of the Revelations, This is the Great Whom, with whom the Kings of the Earth have committed for nitation, and all the Inhabitants of the Earth have been drunk with the Wine of her Fornication. God hath put it into the hearts of these Kings to suffill her Will, and to agree, and to give their Kingdom to the Beast, till the words of God shall be fulfilled.

This Table, said the Solitary, deserves your minding more than any other, both because 'tis taken out of the Holy Scripture, and because we see it accomplished in our days; but especially I desire you to consider the force of these words, That some of the Kings of the Earth do the pleasure of the Great Whore, and agree in the same thing with her, and give their Kingdom to the Beast. I desire you also to examine the present State of most Christian Princes, and you will soon be able to judge whether the Revelation be not accomplished in this Point.

There were several other Figures, which being not sinished he did not shew us. I shall not give you a large Account of our whole Conversation, which would have been much longer than it was, had we not seen that the Sun was near setting, which obliged us to take our leave of the Solivary, whom we lest with a great deal of regrett, who also made as promise him to make him another visit. We were so taken with his Discourse, that we promised him not only one, but many. Madam de la Garde pressed him with much importunity to spend some days at her House, where he might be as free as in his Cave; but he constantly replyed, That he would never leave his Solivade, till he saw an end put to the Persecution of our Churches.

At length we parted, and in all our way homeward we discoursed of nothing but the rarity of this

Ad-

Adv

Bou

Seli

fore

enci

wha

that

befo

(6

the

mic

bet

Hi

pa!

tho

CHI

Di

co

W

it,

21

8

0

d

п

17

t

1

Adventure, That going to vifit unhabitable Caves, we bould there find a Man of Spirit, Worth, Quality and Religion, who had made choice of this dwelling before any other, to enjoy rest and quiet of Conscience. Good God, (faid Madam de la Garde) to what a lad condition is France reduced at prefent, that men preferr the Solitude of Defarts and Rocks, before its Towns and Pallaces! We have no reason (faid I) to wonder at this, fince in Defarts, and the Caves of Rocks, we are free from those Enemies that inflict a thousand Torments upon us, and are more cruel than wild Beafts or High-way Robbers. I am of your Mind, (faid Madam de la Garde) High-way Robbers are far more merciful and Compassionate than the Gentlemen of the Clergy are to those of the Reformed Religion, whom they perfecute with the greatest Fury.

Whilft we were engaged in thefe and some other Discourses of the same nature, we were insensibly come to the Cafile, without perceiving that 'twas Night: As foon as I was come out of the Coach, there came one to me that I knew belonged to my Brother, and delivered me a Letter from him. was formewhat furprized at this, and he observed it, and faid, Let not (Madamoiselle) my Presence aftonish you, for I bring you no News but what is good. I opened the Letter, and found that 'twas only a Letter of Credit, by which my Brother ordered me to hear all that this Man should say. Immediately Prook him aside in a lower Chamber, where he farisfied my Curiofity, by giving me an Account of all that happened at our House, after my carrying away, which my Brother had not time to do.

Seeing you desire it, Madamoiselle, said he, I shall give you as brief a Relation as I can of all that happened. I was with Monsieur de Ponfins my Master when he came to the Castile. He immediately

and werquired for you, but none durft return him a v Antwer; this vexed him terribly : He went himtell to kek you in your Chamber, which he found light in fach a diforder, as 't had never been in while you were there. At length he came into the Kircl in And where's my Sifter, faid he, in a rage to those that were present? tell me presently, or I'll forde you to it. Dut none returned any Answer and the Servant Maids fell a weeping' fo violently that they could not focak a word. Monfieur your Blother knew not what to make of this flence and rears, the Monfeur Abels of John is a Neighbour of ours, a very hopest Man, and one that hath a great Riper for my Brother, and who was at that time. in the Keetin, feid Madamoifelle de St. Phale told lim. Tie no filme, Sir. (fald he) to diffemble, Mad no felle de St. Phale is carried away by force. And who carried her away, faid Monfieur de Poins in an hear The two Rabbol fes, (faid Abelard) the The land Nephery, by the Command of Madam sour Mother : And hereupon he rold him all he knew of your Adventure.

The Arm in which Monfieur your Brother felt lar that time is unexpressible, it obliged him to fit edan, nor could he fpeak a word but this: Alis my Sider, my poor Sifter! He remained in a kind of Afton thinent for about half an hour, out of which Monfieur Abelard awak'd him, by faving, Suffor not your Mind to be overwhelmed with Grief, for what may yet be remedyed, 'tis not full four and twenty hours agoe that this was done, and they are carrying her into a Convent four days journey hence. The go into the Village, and get a dozen of good Troopers that shall accompany you this Evening in pursuit of them. And hereupon he gave him an Account of the way they took, in which he had been instructed by the Old Rabours, who had made hun his confident in this matter.

This

H

i

11

This Counsel raised Monsieur your Brother from his Astonishment, and made him come to himself. He fent Monfieur Abilard to prepare his Company, in the mean time he went up into his Chamber, and being in a desperare Passion, wrete a most litter Letter to Madam your Mother, which he caused me immediately to Copy, by means whereof I have got it by heart, and will, if you pleafe, repeat it to you. I bid him do it (added Madamolfelle de St. Phale) and he prefently obeyed me; the contents of the Letter were as followeth,

Madam.

nd

in

:0

ge or

۲,

Though I bars bad frequent Experience of the Irequality of your Temper, and your blinded transportes. vet I hould never have believed that you would have to far largotten what you once to your felf and your Repatation, as to please a Febrit woo is notoringly infamous, to dange your Dangleter to be violently ravible from your a Daughter, who by reafon of her Vertue is worthy of a better Atother than you are; and by the racibment of moon von have jound a way to balib from you your only Son, who had hather abandon all than be a Speciator of fuch estima Actions. Have you well confliered, Malam, miat Con a will be paffed on this? Will not the world conclude that you have burried away your Dangbest, and forced your Son out of your fight, only because you tested their presence and penetration : For my part, God forbil toat I flouis entertain any disadvantageous fentiment of your but you brew, Madam, that every one bath not the Charity of a Son, and that ill Tongues are at to make terrible work on the leaft occasions. I prav Ged, Midam, to pito you more than you have done your felf. These are the lad words you will ever bear from your Son, who is going to the Army, to extinguif with his Life, the cruel refle-Clions that graw his beart.

Monfieur de Ponfins having written this Letter in. the height of his Passion, when he scarce knew what he did himfelf, gave it to me, commanding me m deliver it to Madam d' Ombreval, and carefully to obforve her Countenance in the reading of it: For there were some private Confiderations which made him resolve not to carry me with him. I faithfully dif. charged my trust, though I had but too just reason to fear being mischiev'd by it. I went into Madam a Ombrez als Chamber as foon as my Mafter had uken Horie, who found Monfieur de Haute Cour & the Caffle Gate, having his Heart full of joy in hopes to fee you, but had like to have dyed in the place as foon as he heard of what had befal'en you. Monfieur de Ponfirs comforted him the best that he could, and told him that he was going to purfue your Ravishers, having a certain knowledge of the way they took : This word fomewhat revived him, and caused him to suspend his Grief, to give place to his Fury.

In the mean time Madam d' Ombreval read her Sons investive with Eyes that sparkled with Rage. Traytor, (faid the to me) Haft thou had the Impudence to be the Bearer of what I have read? I believe, Madam, answered I, that I have commited no great fault in obeying my Master, and in delivering you a Letter from him, in which there can be nothing but what is conformable to the respect he hath for you. She look't upon me with a tevere Countenance, and answered nothing: I made her a profound reverence and withdrew. In the mean time I knew that she had sent for Monsieur Abelard, who was an understanding Man, and able to give good Advice, and that the had shown the Letter to him. Could you have imagined (faid she) that this Traytor de Pansins would have dealt thus with me? Hath he not offended me more than if he had given me a thousand Stabs at the Heart?

riol

not

Col

IO

VO!

da

fro

TV

co

re

m

ſ.

n

for

I confess, Madam, (answered he,) he hath much not the just Grief of feeing a Sister carried into a Convent by force, utterly against her Inclination. casic a Man to do? Ah Madam, those that advised you to fuch an Action, little minded what reflections the World would make on it, nor how much your Reputation would suffer by it. I see, said Madam d' Ombreval, that you are one of de Ponfins Favourers. No, replyed he, I am not, God keep me from approving of his Carriage towards you, 'ris vew culpable. Yet Madam, I have not such base complaifance, to commend the Violence which hath heen acted against your Daughrer, nor your following the Advice of fuch a Person as no one hath a good Opinion of but your felf. What would you have men fay of the influence he hath on you, fo as to make you become unnatural? I know you'll tell me, that 'tis your Zeal that hath made you at this; but can any Zeal authorize Violence? What censure will the World pass on you, when it hears that Madam d' Ombreval hath caused her Daughter to be hurried into a Convent, obliged her Son to shandon all, and that a lefuit is become absolute. Lord over her Mind, and in her Cafile !

Madam d' Ombreval attentively heard Abelards Discourse, and seemed affected with his Reasons, not returning one word of Answer, which encouraged him to proceed. You have, Madam, been highly esteemed by all the World, during the Life of Monsieur a' Ombreval. Alas, shall it be said that this Esteem is buried with your Husband; and that you your self have cast it into the same Grave with his Bones? Have you well considered that remorse and anguish which must necessarily follow what you have done? for I foresee that Madamoissile de St. Posle seeing her self forced into a Cloyster, will in a short time dye for Grief. As

110

for Mounsier de Porsins, he will not fail to find what I'm sure he will go to seek: Thus you'l be at once deprived of two Children, who have all the Accomplishments that you can wish. After their Deaths what will become of Monsieur d Ombrevals and your Estate? without doubt the Jesuites will have it, who have a long time thirsted after this prey. And if the Father Matthew were a Man that would give Glory to God, and confess the Truth, it would soon appear that his sole end in advising you to do what you have done, was to cause your Estate to fall into the hands of that Society.

Though Monsieur Abelard spake only at random, wer he chanced to hit upon the Truth. Madam of Ombreval answered him very coldly, If I were not, said she. assured of your Affection to me and my Family, I should think that you delighted to vex me. If what I have said, answered Abelard, hath offended you, I am ready to withdraw, after having begged your Pardon. But Madam, (added he) methinks it seems very hard and uncount to see you here alone without the Children wherewith God hath blessed you, and whom he hath left you to be your Comfort after the sensible Affliction of your Husbands Death. People will be apt to say that you delight to afflict your self, making your self the Instrument of your Childrens Persecution.

But Abilard, replyed Madam your Mother, what would you have had me to have done? My Son had seduced my Daughter, who was become more than half an Hugonot: According to the Maxims of our Church, I believed that being a Hugonot she would be damn'd, I was desirous to secure her Silvation: And since she would not be reduced by Arguments, (her Brother having so prejudiced her Mind, that that Method could have no effect upon her,) I sent her into a Convent, where I am much deceived if they do not in time surmount her Obstinacy.

flinacy. Madam, said Abelard, I am a good Catholick, and therefore you have no reason to suspect me; but I assure you, if Madamoiselle de St. Phase be forced to return to the Catholick Religion, she will be as lyable to Damnation as it she had always sived in the Profession of the pretended Retormed Religion; for I am not so ignorant as not to know, that God requires an hearty, free, and voluntary, and not a forced Service. When he had said thus, he withdrew, to give Madam d'Ombieval opportunity

to confider what he had faid.

ce c.

ir

13

Madam of Ombreval was touched by nothing more tentibly than what concerned her Honour, of which the was always very temjer. She now plainly law, that never imagining any hurt, the had been drawn by her Confessor into fach Actions, as exposed her to the censure of idle and malicious Verions. She could not conceal her Sentiments from Abelard, whom the caused to come into her Chamber the next day, to give her some Advice. I can advise you nothing, faid he, but to call home your Children. But how can I do that, faid Madam a Ombreval, my Daughter it may be is at this prefent entred into a Convent, and my Son, where shall I fend to seek him? Besides, should I find him, I know not whether he would return or no, and how can I suffer him in my fight after so injurious a Letter as he hath written me. Ah Madam, faid he, I am fure hee'l beg your Pardon with all his Heart, if we were once fo happy as to have him here. As for Madamoiselle your Daughter. they'l fend her back as foon as you shall defire it, Write but one word to the Convent, and they'll not fail of contenting you in this matter.

In this Conjuncture there happened formewhat that had a great Influence on Madam d'Ombrevals embracing more favourable Sentiments, than those the formerly had, which was a long and dangerous

Sick-

rion

fo n

wer

(11

WOI

16

tino

his

WC

de

fiv

bri

di

W

it

1

11

Sicknels of the Father Matthew, which hindered him from returning to the Castle. On the other hand, Madam your Mother, for sear of giving the World occasion to reslect on her, never so much as sent to enquire how he did. Nor did she manifest all her displeasure against him, for having abused the descrence she had for his Advice, by drawing into such inconveniencies as he had done. She went once into your Brothers Chamber, and seeing a Bible on the Table, she opened it, and happened to lite on that place where David bewaiting his Son Absalom, cryed out, O Absalom my Son, my Son Absalom. This passage suited her condition, and made her say, O Firdinand my Son, my Son Ferdinand. I was at that time with her, and saw her shed tears in abundance.

At length the turned towards me, and faid, Thou knowest Mark where thy Master is, Yes Madam, faid I. And wherefore didft thou not go with him? Because (answered I) he lest me behind him to take care of fuch things as he carried not with him. Wouldst thou not do better (added she) in bringing him back? You have, faid I, more power over him than I, and you know what 'twas that drove him hence: I spake these words with some confufion, which the perceiving, asked me why I was troubled : Eccause (said I) my Master was under fuch desperate Grief at his departure, that if he finds not an opportunity to end his days, his Melancholly is of it felf enough to bring him to his Grave, which if it happen, I shall lose the best of Masters, and you, Madam, the most persect and accomplish't of all Sons.

Thy Master hath grievously offended me, and I know not whether it be possible to abuse a Mother more than he hath done me, in the Letter which he commanded thee to deliver me. I seemed to be assonished at this. My Innocence (continued she) together with the purity of mine Intentions

er

b

d

tions bear me witness, for which reason I am norfo much offended as it may be I should have been, were I not justified by mine own Conscience. I wish-(said I) that my Master were here, I am sure hewould begg your Pardon with all imaginable humility and sorrow for what he hath done. And I, (said she) would pardon him with all my Heart, since 'tis tenderness for his Sister was the cause of his offence.

Madam your Mother after the had faid thefe words, left her Chamber, and went into the Garden, where I faw her walk all alone in much penfiveness. Twas much otherwise with her now, than when the used to walk there with Monsieur d' Ombreval, and to converse chearfully with her Children, the remembrance of which filled her heare with fuch cruel Anguish, that she could not conceal it from Monfieur Abelard, who came to fee here Eut Madam, said he, if it shall please God to reflore you your Children, may they promise themfelves to live fecurely with you without fear? And shall the Father Matthew no more move you ro torment those whom you have born in your Womb; whom you cannot deal illy with, without violating the Stricest Laws of Nature? If their Religion differ from yours, how can you help it? Know, (Madam) that in matters of Religion, the more you endeavour to force a Generous Spirit, such as Madamoiselle's your Daughters is, the further is it from yielding to such force. I promise you (said she) that she shall enjoy all imaginable peace, and if I deal otherwise with her, I give you leave to account me; the most inhumane of all Mothers.

I cannot promise you, said he, that she will return, yet I dare hope it. After some other Discourse, Abelard withdrew. This was the fisch day after my Master lest us, to go to your Assistance. This Evening when it was near Night, he came

to Porlins, and went to Abelard's House, who gave him an account of the Affairs of the Castle, and of what he had done, and also of the seasonable sickness of the Father Matthew. Monsieur d'On. brevat also related the Hittory of your Deliverance, and how you were retired hither, where you retoived to abide, 'till you could take other Measures. Hereupon they consulted together what Course was fit to be taken, and at length 'twas resolved that my Brother should write a Letter to Mounsieur Abelard, to order me immediately to bring him his Hapiliments for War, which he expected two Leagues off.

Abelard carried this Billet to your Mother, who faid to him, let him come hither, tell him that I would speak with him before he takes an eternal Farewell of me, after which he may do what he pleaseth. Ah Madam, (said he) he is but an Hours riding hence, I le bring him to you this Night. Immediately he returned to his House, where they super together, and after Supper they went to the Casse; but 'twas very late before they came thither, and Madam your Mother expected

tilem with a great deal of Impatience.

She had a great mind to show her self somewhat cold and severe; but the affecting manner in which Mounsier d' Ombreval threw himself at her Feet, and embraced them, without being able to speak a word, awakened the Voice of Nature in her, in comparison of which all other Voices are weak and impotent. Ah Ferdinand, (said she, raising him up,) I only defired to see you, to hear you condemn your self with your own mouth. I defire no other judge but your own Conscience. I might (said he) find somewhat to plead in my justification, but Madam, I had rather make a sincere Consession of my sault. But Ferdinand, (said Madam d' Ombreval) if I cause your Sister

hett

gre 1

n et

-

P:0

M10

1121

ho

voi

110

11

Ve

De

in

60

6

0

1

return, and leave her in a full and perfect Literry, will not this fatisfie you? for I fee that the great love you have for her, causeth you to fail

in the respect you owe me.

bni

ble

*-

0-

re

Er

11

35

10

.

0

Mountier d' Ombretal seemed satisfied with this Promise, yet he still remained silent. Ah! (said Midam your Mother) I know Ferdinand what 'ris that you are afraid of; you are afraid least I should alter my mind, but for this you may set your Heart at rest, and know, that though the Fatter Mathew were not sick unto Death, yet he hash caused ame too many troublesome Nights ever to make use of his Advice again: I know what Venom there is in all his Counsels, and I swear I'le never sollow them more; I swear this in trath, and in sincerity of Heart; and what is more, I am resolved to sollow no Advice but yours and your sisters.

Seeing 'tis thus, replyed my Master, I shall freew confess that my Sifter is delivered, and I should have brought her with me, could I have expected so savourable an Entertainment. Hercupon my Mafter gave her an Account of the whole success of your Adventure, at which she seemed extreamly pleased, and defired to see you as soon as she could. Immediately the abandoned her Soul to Jov, and would needs have a Collation with her Son before the went to Bed, who satisfied her as to all the demands the made, except those as required a more certain Affurance, that she would continue in this good temper. My Master hath now fent me hither to give you an Account of all that passed, that your mind may be in quiet, least the uncertain Condition of your Affairs should diffurb it.

Here ended the Relation which my Brothers Servant made, whom I dismiss'd; after which I went to see Madam de la Garde and her two in-

eccf

nerfe

Difce

n th

T

hou

in th

of fi

orhe

1 1

upp

POU

pic,

gu!

Thi

:10

up

the

but

of

77

Pre

for

10

00

10

1

comparable Daughters, who rejoyced exceedingly at the happy success of my Affairs, for which we heartily bleffed God. I had a great mind to return home to my Mother, but Madam de la Garde advised me not tos make too much hafte; add. ing, that I would do well to make my entrance into the Reformed Church before my return. I'le lend you my Castle, (said she) and I have a Minister in whom we may confide, and we will have no other Witnesses to the Action but my felf, my two Sons in Law, and their Wives, my Daughters. I thanked her, and faid, that I would not engage her in an Affair whose consecuences might prove fatal to her; but the would not be put off. Danghter (faid she) we are every hour in danger of Death, make use of the opportunity you have to make your Declaration. a time may come when you may exceedingly regret your having let it flip. At length I yielded to her Reasons, and we resolved that the Thursday following should be the day for this Work. As for the place, we chose a Summer-house that was in the Garden. And the Minister being before advised of it, came at the day appoint-

He was a Man of about fifty Years of Age, of a good Carriage: He defired to Discourse me in private. I gave him an account of what made me desire to enter into the Communion of the Reformed, at which he seemed satisfied, finding that I had been pretty well Instructed. After this we went all into the Garden, which was very large and spacious, the Doors of which we carefully shut, for fear of being conter surprized or interrupted, and went into the Summer-house, as we had designed. The first thing our Minister did, was to Pray in general for our little Assembly, after which he made a Discourse, short

ve t-

I.

hort indeed, but very full and affecting, of the eccessive of Conversion, and of being sincere, and persevering in it. When he had finished this Discourse, he addressed himself particularly to me, in these Words:

There's no great need (Madamoiselle) that I hould represent these things to you, or be more large in them. Know that the Work we are about is of fech great moment, that 'tis inferiour to none wher in the World. You abandon a Church that s inviron'd with Pomp and Magnificence, and is apported by almost all those that are great and powerful; a Church that hath under it many Peone, Tongues and Nations, which boafts of Anticairy, and is at prefent more flourishing than ever : this Church (I say) you abandon, to enter into mother, in which you will see nothing but misery, aproach and grief, whose Members are accounted the fifth and off-scouring of all things, and are but very few, in comparison of those of the Church of Rome: A Church that is charged with Novelwand Innovation, and which is in a word oppreffed and desolated at present more than ever hitherto it hath been. I ask you once more before this small and holy Assembly, Have you well confidered what you do? Hath no humane Paffie on or worldly Confideration obliged you to forake the Belief in which you were born and bred, to embrace another?

This Question, for which I was not prepared, thinking I had fully satisfied the Minister in our private Conversation, somewhat surprized me, yet I took Courage, and rising up, returned this Answer. I call God to witness before you, God (I say) who knows the secrets of my heart, and to whom my most concealed Designs are all open and naked, that I forsake the Church of Rome only because

cause it hath fallen into many fundamental Error with respect to Faith: And because I am sensible acted that I cannot continue in it without putting my Salvet vation on a desperate hazard. This is the sole, the phonly Motive of my Change, nothing of any private ad grudge or worldly affection prompting me to it. I ship will also, and I freely consent that you all should be rise up as witnesses against me at the day of Judg. The up as witnesses against me at the day of Judg. The ment, when the most secret imaginations of our applications shall be discovered, if my Conversion be not fineere, or if any worldly Passion hath moved me to it.

hile

11 0

10

dra

bad

W27 in Li

De.

cus

dre 12

car

(1 61

18 of

d' pa

U

I need not rell you what I shall lose in the world the by abandoning the Roman Religion, nor yet the Aliferies I must expect in embracing the Reformed. in I have made divers Reflections upon it for a long one time, and God hath given me Grace to surmount die all the allorements of the world, and the Calamities I have reason to expect in entring into the Communion of Szines. I shall only say, that this Profperity, and those delights that are in the Church of Rone have disgusted me, and made me fear to remain in it; for I remember the instructions of my Father, That it would be with the Church of Rome in general, as we see tis with the wicked in particular, God fuffers them to be advanced and to triumph on the Earth, to render that ruine and fall that will suddenly overtake them, the more dreadful. I am not fo ignorant as not to know, that all those delights and this Pomp of the Romish Church, is a mark of its being a false Church, seeing these things leads men voluntarily to Evernal Misery. This caused me to hate the Church of Rome, even before I was fenfible of its Errors and Impieries: But now that I plainly fee in her all the Marks and Charafters of Mystical Babrion, I leave you to judge whether I am not very willing to leave her, to obey this voice that faith, Come out of ber my People, least you are partake's

from the of her plagues: So that though there were no fible external Form of any other Church, as there was Salver three Ages agoe; yet I should earnestly defire the pole separated from her, for sear of being involvate and in her Condemnation in that terrible day, in I shich God will pour down his Judgments upon all the condemnation in that terrible day, in I shich God will pour down his Judgments upon all the condemnation in that terrible day, in I shich God will pour down his Judgments upon the condemnation in that terrible day, in I shick god will pour down his Judgments upon the condemnation in that terrible day, in I shick god will pour down his Judgments upon the condemnation in the condemnation in the condemnation in the terrible day, in I shick god will pour down his Judgments upon the condemnation in the c

dg- Mach more reason have I to desire to leave her our present, when I only as it were leave a tempe-100 thous Sea, to enter into a safe Harbour: And as e Pomps and Delights of the Church of Rome 110 made me first to doubt whether the were indeed what side the presented to be, and afterwards to hate and define the her in my heart; so the Affictions of the Resonant Church, and the Machinations of the Great Ones of the Earth against her, made me at first them her, and afterwards love her. This is what the me to seek Instruction, which I wanted, to beg nade me first to doubt whether the were indeed what e and me to feek Instruction, which I wanted, to beg is to me, and made use of my Father and Brother to he draw me out of the bad way, which I knew to be ad, though as yet I knew not the good or true way, which leads to Salvation, which is only found in Jesus Christ, who is the Way, the Truth, and the Death by his Death, and whom we ought to take as our only Mediator, Intercessor, and Advocate, addreffing our selves to God by and through him in Each and Truth.

I made my Declaration to the Minister before I came hither, of all the abuses which I found in the Church of Rome: I now reject them all, and resolve to adhere to the Faith of that Church which is the true Spouse of Clrst, particularly to the Faith of the Reformed Churches of France, without adding to or taking from it, or changing it in any particular; and in this Faith I desire to dye, and I trust in the Mercy of God, that having begun a good

work

work in me, he will finish it to his own Glory, and my Salvation. I have for a long time earnest-ly sighed after what I have now done, and I may

lay, This is an happy day for me!

Here I ended my Discourse, to which the Pastor returned this Answer: Madamoiselle, said he, I have heard you with a great deal of Joy, as also have those good Christians that are here present. And how can there chuse but be joy on Earth, seeing there's Joy in Heaven when a Sinner repent, or a Wanderer is reduced into the right way? Being perswaded therefore that your Conversion is sincere and real, "In the Name, and by the Authority of our Lord, I declare you a true Members of his Church. He hath chosen you from Eternity to be his, and as such he hath called you Extermally by his Word, and more effectually by his Spirit; fo that I only publish and make known to men, what God hath done for you.

You are now entred into a path very thorny, but withal very glorious; you shall suffer all the days of your Life, but at length you shall sinish your days in peace and Joy: You must encounter with immumerable Enemies, but the issue of your Combate will be your Glory and Triumph. The God of Mercy, who desires not the Death of a Sinner, but rather that he would repent and live, increase in you all the Gitts of his Holy Spirit, and sustain you with his Power from on high, that having in this World received Authentick Evidences of Eternal Life, he may indeed bestow it upon you in the Heavens.

Confider seriously, that having entred into this way of Eternal Life, you must not draw back, not so much as look back, by remembring and regretting your past Grandure, and Conveniencies: Seeing you abandon all things to follow the Lord

Tefus,

lefus

retur

ting from

hear

at th

Cin d

thing

is th

the

Hav

ferv

unc

and

Da

24

the

lefus, you cannot, with a good Conscience ing an outrage on him, and alienating your heart from the Lord of Glory, who abhorrs a divided heart, an heart that pretends to adhere to him, and at the same time runs out after the World : Little children, faith St. John, love not the world, neither the things that are in the world, if any man love the world, the Love of the Father is not in him. Oh how happy is that Soul, who forfaking all other things, makes the Lord Jesus Christ his supream happiness, his All! 5, Having faid thus, he prayed again for me with much fervour and affection, during which I shed a thoufind tears of Joy, the Evidences of an inward joy and satisfaction. Madam de la Garde and her two T Daughters wept also, and her Sons-in-law were much y affected: This Action was concluded with finging . the 85th. Pfalm, which begins thus.

0

.

1,

1-

)-

0

11

n-

bc

er, ife.

in

in.

T-

in

his

101

et-

ee-

ord

115,

Oh Lord our God, thou gracious Haft been to thy beloved Land; 7acobs Captivity thou haft Recalled with a mighty hand.

Thy People freely pardoned Thou haft all their Iniquities ; O God thou all their Trespaffes, And fins haft covered from thine Eyes.

This was followed by the Bleffing, in which I es New Commer had a double Portion. I must needs by that the Paftor put up many particular Requests for me; and after having ended all, he came to faate me, as one newly entred into their Communion. Madam de la Garde with her two illustrious Daughten followed him, and embraced me an hundred times; we wept on each other for Joy and love: The Monfieurs d' Arbanx, and de Chables were extreamly obliging in their Carriage, which I had affurance. furance was fincere. At length we all went out of the Summer-house, leaving the Minister alone, when had the Generosity to write me a Certificate, of a set having made an Abjuration of the Roman Errors in his Presence, declaring that he own'd me for the Member of the Church, and prayed all the Brotthren in Christ to receive me as such. I thanke the him the best that I could, for he exposed himse to extream Danger, should I happen to lose the Certificate, and it should fall into dangerous hand as an acknowledgment of his kindnesses, I would have obliged him to have received a Ring of a considerable value, but he would not take it, answered fiderable value, but he would not take it, answering me very pleasantly, That 'twas not the part of Convertes to give presents to their Converters, but the of Converters to give presents to their Converts, answered, That twas so indeed in the salse Church but in the true Church they have contrary Max ins; yet I could never prevail with him to take an thing of me.

After we had walked some time, Madam de l Garde was willing to return into the Castle, when we found in the Hall a flarely Collation prepared fous. Methinks Madam, (faid 1) you deal with m as they did with the Prodigal Son, for whom the fire killed the fatted Calf as foon as he came to himself and returned into his Hathers House. She smild he and faid, You humble your felf too much, this comparison doth not suit you. But I pray you, seein there is now joy in Heaven, why should there no

fier

be some joy also on Earth?

We were very cliearful during the Collaion of which being ended, the Paffor took his leave of us to I much regretted his departure, feeing God had are chosen him to receive me into his Church, and were his Spiritual Child, the Apostle Paul himsel ar calling those his Children whom God had brough has into the Charch by his Ministry! He promised at an att offer a few days to return and fee us, and I was who much troubled that I had let him go, before he had of the firstified me in a feruple which I had, viz. whether one is meafe I did return to my Mother, I ought to confor the plainly that I were an Hagonot, or else to pre-Bre end that I were full a Roman Catholick. If I take should confess the former, I should be in danger of mile filling into the same Inconveniences I had been dethicked from, and it may be greater, which I should and early hardly escape. If I should deny it, I should wound only we Conscience, and show that I were assamed of construction of the first present the same in the first present the same in the first present the same in the s

lax i, without dissembling any part of it, preparing an sy self for the most cruel Events, and chusing inher to suffer in my Body than in my Conscitione. I begg'd God to strengthen me in this relation, and to enable me, notwithstanding my so was weakness, to overcome all Crasts, Threatmenings, all kind of Temptation, and my proper Inheritances. I imparted my thoughts to Madam desself a Gards, who approved of my design, and exall deedingly confirmed me in it.

One About three days after my Brother with Mouncins for de Haute-Cour came to visit Madam de 14 Gards in This was an addition to my Joy. After the brit Careffes and Civilities were over, they design that the day of the Reformed Church, and gave them an account of the manner in the sund the system of the Reformed Church, and gave them an account of the manner in the system. Blessed he God, said my Brother, you she have treed me from a great deal of trouble: I as any now call you my Sitter, not only in Flesh at may now call you my Sitter, not only in Flesh and

and Blood, but also in Spirit, and in our Lording Jesus Christ; this obliged him to embrace me ca fecond time, and to give me the Hand of Fellow the thip. Mounfieur de Hante-Cour durst not so open to declare his Joy at what I had done, yet he pro un tested to me, that nothing ever better pleased him

At length Madam de la Garde, believing that me Brother and Mounfieur de Haute-Cour were not com without having something of Moment to impart to me, left the Chamber in which we were. At its Brother took this opportunity to tell me, that me Mother earneftly defired to fee me, and that flould prepare to return with him. I am read be to do it, faid I, but I affure you, that having made my Declaration, I am not in an Hamou me to dissemble, but am resolved to declare boldy of that I am of the Resormed Religion. At this wor give any Brother was filent for some time: At lengt Co he consented to what I had proposed, assuring me that my Mother would never trouble me more of that account, having too sensible remorse for what he had already done; adding moreover, that the was so excreamly troubled for having suffered the Ne Father Matthew to usurp such a Power over her Ha-mind, that she is (said he) fallen sick with it, and was 'tis her Sickness that is one of the Reasons that make feet me preis you to return.

But, Brother, (faid I) hath not the injurious autiter which you wrote her, made her fick? What obtained you mean by Writing fuch things? I Confoly fess (faid he) that I was not my felf when wrote it; and the trouble of having, as I feared lost you for ever, made me in a manner flat mad: Yet this way of Writing hath not want and a good effect, for, it opened my Mother have a good effect, for, it opened my Mother have ed a good effect, for, it opened my Mother have out imagining any hurt suffered the Father mat this

15:2

bee

for th

thi

cv

.

them to usurp such an Authority over her, was capable to do her an injury, seeing to please this Man the had hurried away two Children, of whom the had never any reason to complain; and that so annatural an Action would never be ascribed to a fruple and tendernels of Conscience, but to somein thing more odious. It may be, unless I had wrote this Letter, the would have been the fame that the 2 ever hath been towards you and me, so absolute m dominion had the Father Mathew over her spiit. Moreover I affure you, that the good Wo-M man is not at all displeased with me for what I m have done, and I have all the reason in the World to d le latisfied with the Careffes the hath made me. I'll 10 el you more, Monsieur de Hante-Cour being come ou n fee me, the shewed him all possible Civilities, dly alled him the Deliverer of her Daughter, and hath given him all the hopes that he could expect for her gt Consent, being fully convinced as she her tell said, m OI that the Union between the houses de Roche Blanche and d' Ombreval, was determined in Heaven, whole ha Decree 'tis in vain for men to oppose.

I could not chuse but blush at the hearing of such the News, especially in the presence of Monsseur de he Hante-Cour, who soon perceived the Consusion I and was under, and took this opportunity to fall at my and was under, and took this opportunity to fall at my ake ket, and to tell me, that although his Paffron had been approved of by my late Father, though it was stand the content of my Mother, yet he was resolved to owe me to none but my felf. I had never (faid I) any averfion from you, nor am I cannot be the content of my Mother, yet he was resolved to owe me to none but my felf. I had never (faid I) any averfion from you, nor am I cannot be the fair that the have for you, the Confent of my Father, of my with Mother, and of a Brother whom I am obliged by the top realons to Honour and Love. He loves Madation realons to Honour and Love. He loves Madaher moitalle

Ch

moiselle your Sister beyond expression; I give you leave to draw what sayourable consequences you please out of all these things, and remember that this is the second time that you have somed me to declare the sentiments of my heart, though they were not unknown to you; beware, (said I smiling) you do it not a third time, least you give me just

cause to complain of you.

Ah Sifter, faid my Brother laughing, you would make us believe (did we not know you well enough) that you were worse than indeed you are. I could not chuse but laugh in my turn, and to break off a Conversation so little serious, I entred upon a Discourse of my return. Monsieur de Haute-Cour could not consent to it, being still asraid on my behalf. But my Brother was for it, declaring that he would take such care, and keep such a strict watch over all passages, that they should never be able to play me such a trick as they had done. For my part I desired it with all my heart, and told them, that seeing my Mother was halt vanquished already, the rest of the Victory must needs belong to me.

Immediately we all three lefasthe Chamber to rejoyn Madam de la Garde, to whom we discovered the result of our Consultation: She consented with some difficulty, searing the same things that Monsieur de Haute Cour did. But my Brother assured her that she had no reason to sear, seeing Father Mathew was under disgrace, and besides was sick unto Death, which hindered him from regaining the Empire he had once over my Northers Spirit. We super this Evening very chearfully, and sate up till it was near Morning, spending the time in a thousand innocent Diversions, at length each withdrew to his Chamber to take some hours resist.

My Brother rose early enough the next Morning confidering how late it was when he went to Bed. He discoursed some time with my Lover, at length

her

2

101

Mo

W.

10

115.

the

fpe

in the

of 1

10

ture

nei!

obe

conc

dep.

they fent to my Chamber, to enquire whether I was rifen, and found that I was ordering my Chambermaid (who was of the Reform'd Religion, a very honeft Girle, whom Madam de la Garde had given me, and I have kept ever fince, who is now in the Ship with me) to pack up some things which I had there in order to our lourney. Methinks, faid Monfeur de Haute-Cour, after the usage you have met with at the Castle de Ponsins, you should not be for earnest to return to it. Methinks, Monsieur, answered I, there is nothing more glorious than to return with Honour to a place from whence we have been shamefully driven, when those who have driven us away, are forced by their own remorfe to do us justice, and Carels us a thousand ways, to make us forget the inuries we have received at their hands.

Just as I had spoken these words, came Madam de la Garde into the Chamber, which prevented Monfieur de Haute-Cour from making any reply. Why Daughter, (faid the) are you in such hatte to be gone from me? at least spend this day with us. Ah! Madam, (answered I) should I follow the Inclinations of my heart, I should not only pend this day, but my whole Life with you. Tis in this House that I have made my entrance into the Church of the Lord, and my open profession if true Christianity: But Madam, I have a Mother 10 whom I am obliged not only by Blood and Nature, but also by a thousand unexpressible tenderneffee: She is fick, the defires to fee me, I must obey her in all things in which Conscience is not concern'd. Well, (faid she) I will not oppose your departure, but earnefly I defire to have fome private Discourse with you before you go. Madam, faid I, will presently wait on you in your Chamber, to receive your Inflructions, which I shall always vase as to many Gracles.

0

V

.

d

d

10

re

it

ed is

12.

d

As foon as I had fer my Affeirs in order, and spo-

ken a word or two to Monsieur de Haute-Cour and my Brother, I went into Madam de la Gara's Chamber, I found her alone, the received me with an embrace, which was followed with many most obliging Expressions. My dear Daughter (said she) I admire the fatality of this Adventure; twas but a few days fince that I first knew you, and yet I love you as tenderly as I can possibly love my own Daughters, which are my own Flesh and Blood, yet the same Face that hath drawn out my Affeaions towards you, snarches you from me now, when I most defire your Presence. We must obey, and submit our selves to Gods Will. All things concur in calling you home to a Mother that loves you, and I will not diffwade you from your Duty, yet I would as a Mother, and as a Member of the same Society with you, give you some Advice, which as Affairs are at present, cannot but be useful to you.

Confider Daughter, that you are a Member of the true Christian Church, and that this quality of Reformed Christian, obligeth you to renounce all the Pleasures of the World, which ordinarily follow greatness, and seem to be entailed on the Church of Rome. I shall not insist much on this Point, because by what I know of you, you are too wise and Prudent not to make this reflexion your self: Yet there is another Point on which I have spoken to you already, and shall now speak what more God hath put into my mind; 'tis concerning your Constancy, to shew you, that having embraced the Truth, you are obliged to persevere in it to the end, with an invincible final-

1

i

i

C

0

P

A

in

21

H

no

ne

De

31

ir

ness.

I: bath been observed, and the Observation is confirmed by daily experience, that when a Perfon reneunce hathe Errors of the Church of Rando to embrace the Purity of Faith, such as the Word

h

ft

at

n

d,

.

V,

gs

CS

1-

of

e,

×

of

ce

ly

he

115

ITC

Ki-

ch

zk

יח-

ing

10-

m-

15

cr-

ni.

of

of God teacheth us, the Devil and the World feem to be let loofe against that Person ; God suffers him to be exposed to the tharpest Tryals, to difcover his Iniquity and Hypocrifie, if he return again into the false Church : Whereas the true Children of God, having their Duty always before their Eyes, never fail in fo effential a Point as perseverance is, but continue in the sear of the Lord unto the end. Thus you fee that the same fire of Persecution, the same Furnace of Afflictions show the difference that there is between the Gold and the Drofs that is found with it, which cannot be so well distinguished when they are both taken out of the Mines together. Bur as the Fire diffinguisherh Gold from the Earth or Droft, fo Calamities distinguish the Children of God from Hypocrites, and Sufferings discover what in Prosperity lay conceal'd.

Don't imagine (my Daughter) that your Sufferings will only be from the Enemies of the Faith; indeed they'l do the worst they can against you, if you fall into their Hands; and the least mischief you are to exped from them is the Confication of your Goods, so that you'l be forced to be a poor Fugitive and Vagabond. You may, it may be, promise your felf a comforta le retreat amongst those of our Communion; but this is what is worst of all, and a real cause of Lamentation and Mourning: Als, you will not find them to be such as you imagine. You may think that professing a Religion, which so plainly Commands Charity, Zeal, Humility, and renouncing the World, their manners will be conformable to their belief; but itis nothing so : Don't lye under this mistake, but be perswaded, that the number of those whose Lives. are adorned with Christian Virtues, is very small, in comparison of those that are very Pious in their

I 3

Dif-

Discourses, and splendid in their Profession, withour

ever practifing what they profels.

Oh God! What a Scandal is it, to fee the greatest part of those that profess the Resormed Religion leading Lives to unbecoming the Gospel, especially in other Countreys where the Rods of Adverility have not been yet felt: You will find Pride where you expected Humility, Dissoluteness instead of Modelty, Hardness of Heart instead of Charity. Colonels and Indifference instead of Zeal. Oh what anguish will the fight of these things cause in you! I have known Persons that have bravely born the lo o Goods, and have not at all vielded to Threatthings, Mifery and Imprisonment, whom the fight of the horrible diforder amongst the Reformed throughout the World, have almost vanquisht.

Wherever you retire, you will have many Spres upon you, will watch all your words and Aftione with greater Care and Malignity than if you wete full a Roman Catholich. Your greatest Enemies will be the Women, (I must speak this to the flame of my Sex) who feeing you young and handsome, will not be perswaded that a Person of your Age and Quality could abandon all for the quiet of her Conscience. Hereupon they'l invent a thoufand idle and ridiculous flories against you, as their envy or iralonfie shall prompt them. Others will relate all that they shall hear, adding Malignant Commentaries of their own, either to vex you, or oblige you to discover some discontent. Yea, they'l be apt enough to injure you to your Face, either by dull or bitter Railleries, or else by open affronts; to that that from which you may promife your felf Joy and Confolation, will be to you the Cause of Grief and Tears.

There have been Persons of Honour and Merit that have also been obliged to seek security amongst the Reformed of other Countreys; but alas! they were

much

fe

2

te

W fo

of

O

tic

V th 1

e

e

f

u

0

d

of

75

1-

11

nt

or V'l

er

s ; elf

of

rit

ff

re

ch

much deserved in their Opinion of them, and found that they were only Reformed out of Custome, and because they happened to be born such, and that had they been born Ranters, or Papists, or Jews, they would not have changed their Religion, what saults soever they had seen in it, and on this damnable Principle they hate all those that turn from Error to Truth, as inconstant. Who ever heard of such a depravation! yet I believe those from whom I had an account of it, who are Persons very sincere and Pious, and who would never have discovered the nakedness of those of their own Communion, had not they done it first themselves, by their own Actions.

I speak these things that you may not be furprized nor aftonished, when you see the Lives of some of the Reformed, so different from their Faith, and that you may not take up an ill Opinion of what they believe from their Practices, by which they are so far from honouring the Father which is in Heaven, that they not only dilhonour him themselves, but also by their horrible Examples prowoke others to do fo too. Hor my part, feeing the present Fury of our Enemies, and the liberty they ake in alting it. I expect some dreadful Calamity, and endeavour to prepare my own and my Daugh. ters minds for the most surprizing, and fatalest accidents, knowing that an evil forefeen, and for which Persons are prepared, loseth above half its force.

Ishall conclude my Discourse with sincere Vows for your Wesiare and Prosperity. May it please our good. God to increase in you daily the Gifts of his Holy Spirit: Pray to him, my Daughter, call on him in your Prosperity, and you'l find him graticus anto you in your Adversity; if Men afflict you, he'l fill your Soul with unspeakable Joy; if they wound you, he'll bind up your wounds, and

I 4

apply

1

C

H

E

ti

14

C

fu

ía

Íu

tis

10

th

h

lic

tc

ba

de

10

m

it

ce

n:

M

Ib

ha

for

to

he

apply to them the most healing Balsome; if the deprive you of your perishing riches here below, hell heap on you erernal ones above; this is what I wish with my whole Heart. Moreover, that you may remember me, I beg you to receive this small present, giving me several Books of Devotion very well bound. I intended to have enlarged in my Expressions of thankfulness, but she would not suffer me. I was much pleased with the Present she made me, and carried it my self into my Cham-

ber, to lock it up in my Cabinet.

As foon as these things were over, we went to Dinner, at which we were not fo chearful as we had been last Night at Supper. After Dinner we rook our leaves one of another. I shall not give an account of the Tears we all fhed : I could never have thought 'twould have been fo terrible to me to part from Madam de la Garde and ber two illustrious Daughters, who also made me Presents after their Mothers Example. They all went into the Coach to keep me Company; the Metheurs d' Arbaux and de Chables took Horse to accompany my Brother and Lover, who came on Horfeback, though they also brought a Coach with them. They rode with us about a League and half, where fresh Tears were shed by us, and many Civilities passed between our Gentlemen. My Brother and Lover made their Compliments in parcular to Madam de la Garde and her two Daughters, because of their extraordinary kindness they had shown me; and after varieties of Expressrms denoting thankfulness and affection, our Coaches parted: I was left in mine with none but my Chamber-maid, admiring the strange revolution of this World, that I should return voluntarily the same way which I had been but a little before carried by force. As for my Lover and my Brother, they chose to ride on Horse-back, for fear

deftin'd

fear of any unhappy accident; they had also with them two Men that were very resolute and well

W,

MO

ai

e-

ny

he

n-

to

1c

ve

ve

10

NO

125

n-

115

fe-

th

nd

12-

Mv

21-

gh-

icy

Ai-

out

but

101-

111-

ttle

ind

for

215

I thall not give you an account of what happened this Journey, 'till I come to our Caffle. My Brother caused the Coach to stop some distance from the Gate, because he would not have my Mother know by the noise that we were come. My Brother and Lover alighted off their Horics, and I came out of the Coach; and my Brother having strictly charged all the Family not to give my Mother Notice of our coming, we went up towards her Chamber, and I met her coming out of her Closet, with an extream pale and languishing Countenance, at which I was much furprized: As foon as I faw her, I fell at her feer, faving, God hath been very gracious to me, in suffering me to embrace your Knees with the fatisfaction I have of being affured that you are no longer angry with me. At this surprize my Mother cryed out, and was forced to fit down, not hiving strength to stand up; at length being a little come to her felf, the faid, Juffine, my Daughter! Juftine, my Child! Let me fay, that God hath been very gracious to me, in restoring me my dear Children, after I had blindly taken fuch pains to drive them from me: Come, my Daughter, let me embrace you, after which let Death come when it will, I am ready for it.

I would not stir from her Knees, but she forced me to arise and sit down by her. The Astonishment was so great, that she took no notice of Mounsier de Haute-Cour nor my Brother: At length, Ibelieve, (said she to the former) that your Happiness hath been the sole hindrance of my Daughters Misery, for Heaven would not suffer a Person dear to you, to be carried away, but hath directed you to find her and bring her back. In a word, Heaven bath destind her for you, and men can neither successfully nor honestly oppose its Decrees. You
told me a few days since, that you desired nothing in the World more than to have her for
your Wife. I now give her to you, and both
Command her as a Mother, and begg her as a
Friend to consider you as her Husband, seeing
Mounsseur de Roche-Blanche, and Madam his Wife,
her dead Father, and her Brother, by whom she
ought to be directed tince her Fathers death, have
defired this Union.

Madam, faid I, suffer me to enjoy the Consolation of seeing you, without minding any thing else. I believe (answered my Mother smiling) that you are very glad to see me, but one happiness ought not to be an Obstacle to another which is greater; and after all, Daughter, I owe you a reparation. I give you to this Gentleman, to whom you have, it may be, given your Heart already, this ought to make you forget the Injury that was done you. And on the other hand I am indebted to Mounsier de Haate-Cour for having restored me my Daughter, though (it may be) he aim'd more at his own satisfaction than at mine.

I confess I was both confounded and vext that these things should be spoken in my Lovers presence, and my Mother perceiving my trouble, arose, and after having recommenced her Civilities with Mounster de Haute-Cour, and her Caresses towards my Brother; I desire, said she, to allow my Heart a little-loy, after its being delivered from such cruel Afflictions. Immediately she sent for the two Rabourses and Abelard, who had the Honour to eat with us; the rest of the day was spent in a great deal of Pleasure, till Supper, during which they made me sit near Mountier de Haute-Cour. You may better imagine, than I can tell, what Discourses passed between us. In the Evening my Mother ordered

1

1

uc.

ou

10-

for

oth

4

ng

fe,

he

ve

0-

ne

) p-

1

m

35

d

d

at

e-

c,

ds

I

0

10

ıt

u

my Brother to take Horse the next Morning, and invite Mondens and Madam de Roche Blanche, and Madamoi-like de Gari offes their illustrious Daughter, to our Caffice dding that in the mean time she would keep Monseur de Haute-Corn with her as a pawn: This Employment my Brother payfully accepted, and went very early the next Morning towards Roche Blanche.

I never had enjoyed fo much Peace and Pleasure fince my Hashers Death, as I now did. I was much in my Mothers Favour, who dealt with me more like a Friend than like a Daughter. She loved me verritenderly, and I loved her much after the fame manner. I freely enjoyed my Lovers Company without the least jealousie or hinderance. One thing indeed troubled me, which was the affurance I had that there was fomewhat I w near my Mothers heart, which though the endeavoured to conceal from me, as much as possible, yet the could not from time to time forbear fighing in my presence. I once refolved to ask her the reason of her so great trouble, of which I feared my change of Religion was the cause. She perceived my sear, wherefore the resolved to put me out of doubt : 1 know, Justine, faid the, that you believe your fentiments about Religion are the cause of my Affliction: No, no, I am not forry to fee you an Hugonot, or ready to be one. What would you fay, should I tell you, that I am apt sometimes to approve of what you have done, and to envy your Condition?

So unexpected an expression struck me silent for some moments, but at length I answered thus. Madam, (taid I) I have entirely rejected the Romish Religion, and embraced the Protestant; in which I hope, according to that assume which God hath graciously given me, I shall live and dye: But Madam, give me leave to speak one word out of the Word of God to you, which I have often heard

from

from my Father and Brother ; To day ij you will her his voice, barden not your beart. When they fpake these words to me, I was as you at present are, under doubts and much unc reainty what course to take. They advised me not eto trust to my own up. derstanding, but to begg of God that he would show me what to do. I did fo, and God at length determined me to do what I have now done, for which I do, and I hope I shall to all Eternity bless his Holy Name. Besides, my Brother gave me a New Testament, which I read several times, and we had some Discourses together, till at length the Spirit of God finished the work he had begun in me. Take, Madam, the same Course, and be asfured, that the reason why your Priests and Confesfors forbid you to read the Holy Scriptures, is, because its exceeding great light is abundantly sufficient to discover all their Errors and Abuses. Indeed (replied my Mother) the words that you have spoken are very wonderful: To day if you will hear his coice, barden not your heart. Yes, Madam, (faid I) you'l find it thus written in the oath or 95th Pfalm, where David exhorts his People not to refift the Voice and Will of God, if they hear him speaking to their hearts or to their Eyes by his wonderful Works. And St. Paul in the third Chapter of his Epifile to the Hebrews, applies this passage to those to whom God had discovered the first sparks of his Truth, either by his Word heard or meditared on, or by holy speculations, for these things are indeed the Voice of God; fo that none can harden their Hearts against it, without becoming guilty in his fight.

If you please, Madam, (added I) I'll setch you the New Testament which my Brother gave me. Do so; (said she) and if you see Monsieur dt H'ut:-Cour bid him come hither, for I will not conceal our Conversation from him. I went, or rather

flew,

(

1

2

1

1

1

Ł

i

- (

(

1

hes

ake

are,

10

un-

WO

de-

for less

2

ind

the

in

aí-

be-

CI-

ed

10-

his I)

lm,

ke

ng

ful his

ofe of

ed

in-

en

in

ou ie.

de

n-

er

w,

flew, to discharge the Commission my Mother had given me. I called my Lover, to whom I gave a brief account of the disposition of my Mothers Spirit; Thegg's his affiftance in perfwading her, which he joyfully promised; so that we went both to her. Monficur, (faid my Mother) you cannot but be fenfible of the Esteem and Affection that I have for you. defire that you would fincerely tell me your Mind. without the least complaifance: My Daughter hath confessed, that the is of the same Religion that you are. For my part, I neither love nor value her the less for it; and sometimes I am apt to approve of what the hath done, and believe, that had I been in her circumstances I should have done the same thing. In a word, the farther I look into it, the more abuses I discover in the Roman Religion; but yet I know not what to do, for we ought not to abandon a Belief in which we have been born and bred, unless very weighty Reasons oblige us to it; nor yet can we persevere in a belief whose falfhood we are convinced of, without wounding our Conscience. These Considerations keep my mind in suspence; pray help me to determine what course to take.

Madam, (replyed Monsieur de Haute-Cour,) since tis your pleasure that I speak my thoughts freely, I shall not amuse my self by discoursing largely on the Truth and Purity of the Reformed Religion, nor the Errors of that of Rome, for this would be a work of some hours, yea of some days. The Church of Rome errs in many fundamental poynts, and the Arguments she urgeth in her desence are so weak and captious, that I should never have done, should I give you a particular account of them. I shall therefore turn my Discourse another way, and prove that you have no reason to make any distinctly of leaving the Romish Religion, since

those very Persons that press you to persevere in it.

are not themselves perswaded of its truth.

Hath it not been told you a thousand times, that Auricular confession was absolutely necessary, there being dreadful Anathema's pronounced against such as conceal any thing from their Confessor? I shall not inful on this, that this kind of Confession is not to be found in Scripture, without offering abundance of Violence to ir, and that if the Primitive Church ever admitted it, 'twas never accounted in-dispensibly necessary, as 'ris now. What need is there, (Madam) that a Priest should know all my Hearr, and discover all my weaknesses, sears and fcruples, whereby he may do what he will with me, especially drain my Estate to enrich Churches and Monasteries? This hath occasioned most of those, who have some sence of the Abuses of Confession, to confess no more than is conwith their Interest: Especially those whose Confessors are Jesuites, will not if they are wife, confess all they know, do, or think, because they may affure themselves, that their secrets will be revealed, and will pass to other Persons besides their Confessor, notwithstanding the great Corporal and Spiritual Punishments pronounced against those that reveal Confessions. Remember (Madam) the Questions that your Confessor ask'd you, and you will find after having examined the Penances and farisfactions that he ordain'd, that he made use of your Confession only to get somewhat or other from you, or elie a more absolute dominion over your Spirit. This therefore is an Article, which the Church of Rome hath published for her own private Interest, I mean worldly Interest: Not to mention the many other mischiefs that are occasioned by it, much like those for which it was formerly prohibited in the Greek Church, by Nectarius Patriarch of Constantinopie. Again,

1

t

t

t

n

L

1

c

d

1

G

ıu,

ha:

be-

uch

1:31

1 15

un-

ITC

in-

my

and

ich

ch-

oft

ises

on-

ofe

arc

wie

Will W

des

OT2

rose

the

100

Ĭía-

of

ONT

the

pri-

1 10

cali-

erly

ain,

Again, Plugatory, what is it but an Invention to maintain plenty in the Kitchins of their Clergy, who have also found out the Remedy against it, which are Masses for the Dead, and Pilgrimages? What Man, being perswaded that his Soul must faffer the most dreadful Torments for many thouand of years, can avoid being terrified at the imaguarion of it, and refuse to give large donations for the finging of multitudes of Masses, by their means to be faved from it? Who fees not that this is nothing elie but a meet humane Invention? for Purgatory was invented to cause the Mass to be prized, and the Mass to futnish the Kirchin; whence it follows, that the Roman Religion is partwinvented, to furnish the Clergy with means to live in pomp and deliciousness. This hath occasiened many Roman Carholicks to laugh at Purgatory, and contemn the Mass, adhering only externally to the Roman Religion for their advantage, but indeed are of no Religion at all, because they judge that all Religions are like the Roman, invented only to awe the People, and keep them in due bounds, as more effectual to this End, than Arms and Cittadells.

As for the Mass, did we but know the multitude of Priests that laugh at it in their Hearts, it
may be the hundredth part of all the Priests in the
World would hardly be found good Catholicks.
Did they believe that Christ was really present, and
that they could bring him down from Heaven to
eat him, they would behave themselves far otherwise in the celebration of the Mass than now they
do. Not one of them but would tremble, knowing
that he held in his hands Christ the Son of God,
God and Man, the Moparch of Angels, he that shall
judge, him at the last day, and could punish him
immediately for his offences against him. They
would neither be what they are, nor do what they

do, if they were perswaded that they held the Spad viour of the World in their hands, who is jealous of his own Glory. In a word, (added Madamoifelle de St. Phale) Monfieur de Haute-Cour faid the fame things for substance that Monsieur de B. V. faid the other day against the Father Maimbourge, who undertook to defend the Prohibition the King had made. That no Catholick should turn Protestant: and that such as had formerly been Protestants, and had turned Catholicks, should not return to their first profession, of which Prohibition or Declaration Monfieur de B. V. shewed the horrible Injustice and Abuse.

My Mother hearkened very attentively to what Monsieur de Haute-Cour said. Indeed he made his Reflections in fo curious and fweet a manner, and with so much strength of Judgment, that she heard him without interrupting him at all. We had every day Discourses of this Nature, till at length I perceived my Mother was more than half conquered, when I faw all the Images that were in her Charaber removed and laid up in a Garret, instead whereof the ordered my Fathers Bible with Lisdates and Defmarets Annotations to be brought her, in which I very often read to her. Monfieur de Hauts Cour expounded feveral paffages, and shewed her what was believed and practifed in the Church of Rome contrary to the Scripture.

On a certain day as we were all together, she took up my New Testament, and read the words which my Brother had wrote in the beginning: Behold I Stand at the door at knock, if any one hear my voice and open to me, I will come in unto bim, and fup with him, and he with me. Do you know, Madam, faid Monfieur de Hante-Cour, what Christ means, when he faith that be flands at the Door and knocks? He doth this when he toucheth an Heart, as he hath done yours, when he makes it know by frequent

ior 10

101 10

tha

Sp

de

ch

HO TC

> a 15

or to

M

lu 10

10

20

V

n.

01

CI

h

2

t

t

which

Sr

lous

noi-

the

faid

sho

had

ne ;

ind

eir

ion

ice

hat

his

nd

rd

re-

I

er-

er

ad

10-

in

1

er

of

ok

ch

ice th

d

en

le

th

nt d. idmonitions, that it must come to him. Hear therefore his Voice, and open the Door of your Heart to him, conforming your felf to his Will, and trusting in his Holy Promises; if you let Christ in unto rou, he will sup with you, and you with him; that is, he will have a perfect Communion with your Spirit, and will give you an earnest of his Glory.

Your Arguments (replyed my Mother) are indeed very strong: But cannot the Catholicks turn mem to their advantage? and cannot the Priefts, interpret them in favour of their Church as well as reu of yours? They may indeed do it, (faid he) but against Reason. For Christ invites us to open to him; itis he alone that will come in to us, bequie he would have as full a Communion with us, is the Head can have with its Members. Tis to him alone therefore that we ought to open the door of our hearts, acknowledging him to be our only Saviour and Mediator. We must not open it to He-Saints, or She-Saints: No, not to the Virgin Mary her felf, who, though the bare the Lord Jefus Christ in her Womb, yet hath not the Power to fave us. Let us therefore open thefe doors to Jesus Christ alone. Let us set them wide open, and invite him to dwell with us; let us have an holy confidence in his promises, and we shall be erernally united to him. But let us that the doors of our hearts against all other things; that is, let us put no Confidence in any other merit but his. 'Tis evident, that this was our Saviours Defign: And 'ris this that the Reformed Church teacheth, who exhoris all Persous to hear the Voice of Christ, and give him entrance, and none other. Whereas in the Church of Rome we are called upon to open the doors of our Hearts to Saints of both Sexes, especially to the Blessed Virgin. Hence it follows, that to hear the Voice of Christ, and open the doors of our hearrs to him, we must adhere to that Church

which acknowledgeth his Merit to be alone necessitation and efficacious for the Salvation of Souls 7 and who if our Church be not this Church, I am out als

hopes of ever finding it.

At this very moment my Curiofity grew to come flrong for me, and made me ask my Mother t Wi what I might impute this great alteration, that she be Ing bur a little before so Zealous a Casholic, was not become half a Hugonot? God (replyed she) doth won derfully work what pleaseth him, and often suffers us take some sale steps, and to be in danger of fulling and then presently bestows upon us sence and spirit of discrining, and causeth us to withdraw ou foot from the evil way in which we were going mu foot from the evil way in which we' were going man Above all, Daughter, that that buth most disable and me, is, that the Father Mathem, in whom I entire the ly confided, hath discovered himself all at once the Twas he that exhorted me to send away my Daughter, and by my severity rowards my Son, force himself to leave me too; nor had he the Patience to sa till my Son was gone, before he solicited me to be set show my Estate on the Society. Twas at this we list instant that your Brother wrote me a most best and injurious Letter, which enraged me beyone me expression: Two days after I examined this Let an excusable than I imagined, and that I had give her excusable than I imagined, and that I had give Vi him but too just a Provocation. You already know her without doubt, the issue of that business, so that need not repeat it to you.

Thus I lost the good Opinion I had of my Con the fessor, and called to mind many other particular Go which made but too plain a discovery of his Disposit we on. The first thing that I defired to do, was to call home decomy Children, and afterwards to make use of no other ten. Advice but theirs, seeing God had been so graciou co to me as to bestow on me such as were both will as and Vertuous. About this time I was obliged to g in

ina

ecedinto your late Fathers Chamber, to feek fome Papers an which I needed. I could not forbear reading in to his Books, I found many of controversie, amongst others I saw a little Manuscript, which as far as I to could judge by the hand and Style, was of his own to writing and Composure a little before his Death. ebe The Title of this little Book was, The Marks of the nor tree Church lately terified in pur days.

von

I may truly say, that the reading of this Piece line perfectly changed me, for it disabused me in many purticulars. First of all, it quoted expressly those outlings, in which it was affirmed, that the Church of the perfect of a thousand sufferings, and there are sere many curious reasonings on this subject. In the second place he confirmed this Truth, by all the passed on in the third place, to those that the shirt protestants had endared, by Wars, Massacres, and start forments. In the fourth place, he proved that the second church was the true Church, which the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the second in the last place, he undenyably proved that the second in the second ion come the Authors of their own ruine: And to fuch will as were still subject to such a-Church, not to persist gran their subjection, but to open their Eyes, since the ine

Church of Rome her felf discovers her own weak nesses.

I was much affected with this Manuscript, so that I was resolved, if God gave me opportunity, to be better inform'd of the means of Salvation than then was. About this time your Brother returns and made his peace with me. I laid open the state of my Soul to him, and I leave you to judge whe ther he took not all imaginable pains to perswad me, which yet he could not fully do, because could not tell how to think of abandoning a Reli

gion in which I was born and bred.

After the had spoken what the thought fir, Mon fieur de Haute-Cour return'd her this Answer, Ma dam, faid he, I am to far from blaming, that I high ly approve of your ferious confidering what yo are about to do, before you enter into the tru Church; but remember, that you must not spen your whole Life in these uncertainties. For, Ma dam, God hates a divided heart, and proteftet that he cannot endure those that are lukewarm: This is what he faith to the Angel of the Church of Lis dicea: I know the works, that thou art neither con nor bot, I would thou wert either cold or bot; but be caufe thou art neither cold nor hot, but lubewarm, I wi from thee out of my mouth. We ought not only to interpret this lukewarmness with respect to Devo tion, but also with respect to Faith; for as Godie jeds fuch as are lukewarm with respect to Pier as well as fuch as are flark cold; so he also reich those that are unresolved with respect to true Faith as well as those that are plunged in Error. Gw me leave, Madam, to tell you, that the pre fent condition of your Soul cannot please God, fo in the Estate you are now in, it is neither cold no hor, but lukewarm, and this is a terrible word. will spew thee out of my mouth; for 'ris a Decree of Rejection. God spake thus to the Israelites, He

eak stal be God, serve him, but if the Lord be God, serve him? In the Estate in which you, Madam, now the re, you are neither a Catholick, nor of the Resormant of Religion, and consequently cannot be saved in their in the Catholick Religion, or in ours. But, and stale in the catholick Religion, or in ours. But, the Madam, shall I give you good Advice, after having shew'd you your Danger? Address your self to God when a ardent Prayers, 'tis he that must determine you, and is he that will overcome all your doubts and serve less, and sweetly and efficacions of draw you to him. les, and fiveetly and efficaciously draw you to himles, and fiveetly and efficaciously unto him, for his
less is the that will overcome an jobs
less, and fiveetly and efficaciously unto him, for his
less is the that will overcome an jobs
less is the the is safe, and his Burden is light. I was extreamdon w pleased with Monsieur de Haute-Coars Discourse, who w pleased with Monsieur de Haute-Coars Discourse, art much assected my Mother, who declared, that he would sollow his Advice: We spent some days a these Discourses, till Monsieur and Madam de Reche Blanche, Madamoiselle de Gariolles and my Brother, arrived at our Cassie. My Mother, who had lost her Husband since she saw them last, received them with much Civility, but also with some cars: and had they not lest her to come to me, the would have wept too. I shall not give an action of all the Caresses I received. At length I will the liberty of saluting Madamoiselle de Garisotti, for whom my Mother hath expressed a great deal of tenderness. I know not how long we done hould have continued in our embraces, had they been to separated us.

The mest serious Discourse Monsieur and Madamoiselle Roche Blanche had with my Mother, was about the surfaces drawn up and signed. They caused us to

ion

pre atticles drawn up and figned. They caused us to for called to them, to tell us this News, at which do we were not much troubled, but made Presents one and to another. This parked without much Mystery ee and Cercinony, because all the Parties were agreed, Housed twas refolved to conceal our Marriages, till we had

had fet our Affairs in order: Monsieur de Roche at Blanche, and Monsieur de Haute-Cour, resolved to ing affairs in concert with my Mother and Bro-out ther. This Evening we were as chearful as position fibly we could, in an House of Mourning, in which extra double Marriage had been concluded on, to the star satisfaction of all concern'd.

The next Morning, my Mother discovered the ter Dispositions of her Mind before us all, at which neither Monsieur nor Madam de Roche Blanche, nor Madamoiselle de Garifolles were surprized, because my Brother had told them of it before. We all om prepared, our selves with several Reasons to perform to mention them. I am, said she, sully resolved to and determined, I will due in the Resormed Religion, take The Happy, Peaceful and Pious Death of my Husband, makes me defire to due like him. Moreover, the large Discourse of Monsieur de Haute-Cour, which I have any seriously weighed and considered, hath overcome all ness my scruples. My Daughter hath done that already which I should have done before her, did God it restrain his Providence to the Order of Nature: now But I find, that being more obtainate than she, he sliet was pleased to cause her Conversion to precede, at that she might be an instrument in mine. You solve know my resolution, I beg you to advise me in I what manner to make my Abjuration, and my open eleentry into the true Church.

The Opinions were different, but at length they at approved of mine. I told them that in fifteen days creathere would be the Lords Supper at Madam de la a for Gardes Cafile, where would be the Minister to ter a whom I had made my Abjuration, Incognito, by accordant of the Religion: That my Mother and I would be made the Religion: That my Mother and I would be made the first thicker under pretence of thanking Madam de having that for her Civility towards me, but indeed one that

ance, that should exceed that of Monseur Scar-ey n, but wee'll find you some other employment. is treupon they had a very pleasant? Conversition to that I judg d my self happy in having a Factor and Mother-in-law of so good a Humour, for the accounted them such already. Twas impossible at the usero mind law serious butiness this day. As all the my Mother, she had a very tender Conversation with Masam de Garishker, and her Affections ed ere to fee apon h ry that the kenned to have for-

121

gotten which of us the had brought into the world I was fo far from being jealous ar this kindness, that I rejoyced at it with all my heart : Befides, Monfigur and Madam de Roche Blanche had fuch fentiments for me, then I had no reason to be differe. fied in the fall of the state o

This Evening at Supper, Madam de Roche Blanci, earnestly invited my Mother to go with her to her house. My Mother excused her self for a while but feeing Madam de Roche Blanche would take no al denyal, the at last confented. 'Twas therefore re- fe folved that Monfieur and Madam de Roche Blanche. my Mother, Madamoiselle de Garisolles, and I, should take this Journey, and that Monsieur de Haute-Cour and my Brother should tarry at Ombreval, to give fig order concerning some Affairs there; though 'twas the somewhat cruel to be separated from my Lover; Gayet I diverted my self as well as I could all the sand. I found the Castle of Rothe Blanche, the De Gardens, and all other things there in a better ty Estate than I could have imagined: We abode in he this delicate place sour or five days, during which Ev. we were admirably treated, and took many plea-wit fant and diverting Walks. At length we were forced to separate, because the time in which we were
to be at Madam de la Gardes Castle drew near;
my. Mother and I took our leaves with many tean,
which were presages of the end of our mirth, and
that we should never all meet again, which indeed
we never did. Monsieur de Rache Blanche ordered
four Troopers to guard us. My Lover and my
Brother rode to meet us, and after having saluted
traff us, came into the Coach to us, and we all arrived Chu at One wat alm of as foon as it was Night. | fuch

The four Troopers abode with as three or four of of days, for we rejoived to make use of them a caree guard us to Madam dela Gardes, where we came Piets the day before they defigned to receive the lord

Suppu

1

2

. 1

N

1

d

W

n

1.

1-

.

.

1

c,

10

e.

10.

Supper. Madam de la Garda was exceeding glad to lee me. My Mother and the knew each other, having seen each other at Paris, when they were Virgins, but being of a different Religion and Province, they had no great Acquaintance; besides, they did not know each other by the Names of Madam de la Garda, and Madam d' Ombreval. Our Joy at this meeting was so great, that I wonder we dyed not of it, as 'tis said some have done; especially that of Madam de la Garda was much increased, when she understood by me that my Mother was come hither to abjure the Romish Religion.

d That the Domesticks might not susped their De-K? fign, they had pirch'd on a week-day rather than Vd the Lords Day, to celebrare the Supper, besides the 25 Garden was an admirable place for fuch work. The F fame Minister in whose Presence I had made my ho Declaration, came the Evening before, and was vehe ry ready to do what we now defired of him, as er he had been before with respect to me. The same in ch Evening he had a long Discourse with my Mother, a- with which he was well fatisfied; fo that the next or- morning my Mother was Received, to the common its joy of us all, and with the same formalities, and would not receive any attestation from the Minister.
After which the Minister made a short, but good and Learned Sermon, with which I was much edified; as also was my Mother, who soon perceived a my great deal of difference between it and the empty ted traffichat's usually vented by the Preachers of the Church of Rome. Neither the nor I had ever heard fuch a Sermon before, so that we received the Word of God as hungry Souls. A rerwards we communicated with a chousand times more Devotion and Piety than ever we had at Mass, so necessary is the 174

Knowledge of the Truth to make a good Communicant : The finging of Pfalms, and Prayers, in a Tongue that we understood, much affected us, we not having been used to hear such things; especially my Mother was ravished at the Song of Simon. which is ordinarily fung at the end of the Communion, in which the found words that wonderfully fuired her Condition!

As foon as all was over: Alas, faid my Mother to Madam de la Garde, how fingular a Consolation have I been all my Life deprived of, in being kept from the Knowledge of the true Religion! Oh how criminal are those that would destroy so devout, to spiritual, so edifying a Worship! After the unexpressible fatisfaction which I have received, I may truly apply to my felf, what we but now fung, Oh Lord, now lettel thou thy Servant depart in peace, for mine Eyes have feen thy Salvation, Let Death come when it will, I expect it with Joy. And I hope that God will not suffer me to languish long in this World, seeing I desire the full enjoyment of those Bleflings, whereof he hath given me an Earnest at present. Madam, (answered Madam de la Garde.) we ought to fay as our Lord did before his Paffion, Father, not my Will, but thy Will be done.

We abode all this day with Madam de la Garde, and the next Morning took our leaves of her, though much against the Consent of this obliging Lady, whom my Morher thanked as well as the could. If I wept formerly when I parted from her, I now wept more, foreseeing the miseries that were like to befall me. My Mother would not fuffer them to accompany us. During all our Journey we discoursed of the Excellency of the Worship of the Reformed, above that of the Papifts, in stirring up true

11

h

0

C

no

an

in

Wa

CO

ı

v

t

le

c

1,

r,

r,

ct

ve

ne

uc

true Piety in the Soul. For my part, (faid my mother, the more I examine things, she more I admire the Conduct of Divine Providence. You know, (Fuffine,) how furious I was in matters of Religion. I remember the time in which had any one affured me that you would have been a Protestant, I believe I should have strangled you in your Cradle, and yet God made choice of you to be an Instrument of my Convertion. Madam, (an-(wered I) he who converted Perfecutors into Apofiles and Marcyrs, could early make you, who were once fixed in the Belief of the Roman Church, a member of his own Church. We often fee miracles of this Nature, which God works to flow the wonderful Efficacy of his Spirit upon the most obstinate Hearts.

These and the like Discourses we had on the Road, till we came to our Castle, where we sent back the Troopers that guarded us, having satisfied them beyond their hopes. Median do Bieslas, who was my hathers Sister by a second Bed, as I told you before, and who had been married in Pomerania, was come into France to take possession of an Estate that was fallen to her by the Death of a Sister, and was so kind as to afford us the Consolation of seeing her. She was ravished with Joy, as soon as she heard of my Mothers Conversion. There were also many Careties that pass'd between her and Monsieur de Haute Cour, my Brother and my felf, which I shall not now relate.

In the midft of all our Joys my mother fell fick, and her Diftemper grew to violently upon her, that in two days we began to be afraid of her; and what was at first but a doubtful fear, was shortly after converted into a cruel certainty. Notwithstanding

a

d

0

h

ol

S

no

rea

tha

Ca

no

de

the

mi

hin

los

not

10

Ga

of

WCC

Cer

and

wer

that

ligit

the Violence of the Diftemper, my Mothers Umderstanding, Judgment, and Speech never failed her. The very first moment that the took her Bedthe was persuaded the should never rise more; for which reason the couragiously prepared her felf for D'ath. Dispense with me, (faid Madamoiselle de St. Phale the rears running down her cheeks,) from relating all the circum lances of her Death, the very realthbuse of which pierceth my very heart. I shall only tell you that she dyed a true Reformed Christian, and that the heartily bleffed God that he was pleased to discover his Truth to her, and to take her ou of the World, not suffering her to fee those Calamitic with which his Church was threatned, and in which the might have had a large there. She carnefly exhorted me to Piery and Pertoverance in the true Religion : She called for her hour de Haute-Cour, and in Brother, each of them a very tich Ring: Afterwards the divided her lewels into two nares, pivino me .!. o ine one, and com mining tile other to my Brother for Madamoifelle de Garijoillis, for whom the had defigned them.

Having made this divition, the disposed of the rest of her Estate, making my Brother her Heir, on such terms as neither I nor my Lover had reason to be distrissied. After which the would think or nothing out the Concerns of another World: And Monticur Haute-Cour, my Brother, and I were always employ'd in reading some Chapters of the Holy Scriptures, or some of the Consolations of the Faithful against the Fear of Death. But seeing us very apt to sall into tears from time to time, My Children, (said she) I have no need of your teats, but of your Constancy. My Brother was no more able

able to refrain from Tears than I, nor Monficur de Hante-Cour than either of us, though we used our utmost endeavours to stop them. Some short time after my Mother dyed in our Arms, her last words being that Passage which she had often in her Mouth, Lord, now lettest thou thy Servant depart in Peace, for my Eyes have seen thy Salvation.

'Tis impossible for me to give you a true Account of the Condition in which we then were. Alas, how often did I envy my Mother! I need not take much pains to perswade you that I had na on to be much affliced. 'Twas well for us that Madam de Broffes was with us, to take some Care about the business of the Family, which was now in a terrible Defolation; for as for Monsieur de Haute-Cour, his time was taken up in Comforting me, who had like to have followed my Mother into the Grave, fo that he was incapable of minding any other bufiness; besides, he had a real Affection for my Mother, as the had also for him. As for my Brother, whom my Mother had loved fo renderly, he was fo affected with this ttroak, that for several days he could not reft. nor would he fo much as ear, but when forced to it.

Madam de Roche-Blanche, and Madamoiselle de Garissies came very opportunely to awaken him out of this Lethargy: Their coming caused us all to weep airest. We buried my Mother without any Ceremony, near my Father, as she had ordered, and we did what discovered not only to all that were in the Castle, but also to all the Village, that my Mother and I were of the Resourced Religion; which was, that we sent tor no Priest when K 3

my Mother lay on her Death-bed, nor buried her in Catholick and Holy Ground, as they are pleafed to term it. These things made a great noise in the Countrey, and stirred up many against us, but I could never sully learn what Mischief they had design'd to do us.

Madam de Roche-Blanche had scarce been with us two days, before she received a Letter from her Husband, in which he gave her an Account that there was a Design form'd to carry me into a Convent by force, and that it behoved me to be upon my Guard. The day following this Advice was constrm'd, and 'twas said moreover, that Madamoiselle Garisseles was to be carried away with me, and that we were to be shut up in two different Convents. This News terribly aftonished us, and we were forced to leave off weeping, to provide for our security.

-

1

i

T

(

A

d

6

h

V

A

t

15

t

1

n

71

71

2

d

b

fc

to

We dayly received very troublesome Tydings from divers places, but the worst of all was, that a certain Person was coming from the King to demand me, and take me from my Brother and Lover, and that besides this, he was to trouble my Brother for his Estare. Madam de Broffes offered to carry us out of the Kingdom into Pomerania, where we might be fafe; this Proposition was accepted with respect to me, as for Madamoiselle de Garissolles it was resolved that the should return home, and that 'twas not likely they would come to fnatch her out of the Arms of her Father and Mother. We had no time to lose: I may truly say, that my Eves are inexhaustable bountains of Tears, for I shed abundance when I parted from Madam de Roche Blanche,

T

ie

Y

m c.

e.

1-10

id

oc

oc

VS

d

t-

25

18

er

to

ai

m

115

e, ed

10 he

no

es ed

int

bi,

Blanche, my Lover, and Madamoiselle de Gariffolles: Mountieur de Haute-Cour would willingly have accompanied me, but I forbad him by all the Authority I had over him, for I feared least by doing thus he might bring much trouble on his Head. I would not have so much as my Brother go with me, for fear left it should be faid he had convey'd me away.

Thus I was forced to leave those that were most dear to me, and my Miseries were so far from having an end, that they daily feem's to increase; yet I got out of France well enough, not being discovered by any, having taken my Chamber-maids Habit, and given her mine. All my Fardles were also by the Artifice of Madam de Broffes fafely convey'd, and had I not been taken fick by the way, I believe we should have been in Pomerania before now. At length we came to Ansterdam, where I found a Servant of my Brothers, with Letters for my Aunt and Me, both from my Lover and Brother.

In these Letters I had an Account of what is too long to relate, for 'twould furnish matter for another Hiftory. I shall only tell you, that amongst much sad News, I learnt that my Brother, my Lover, and Madamoiselle de Oariffills were come out of France towards Pomerania, and that I should in a short time see them, and that 'twas the Will of Mounfieur and Madam de Roche Blanche that our Marriages Mould be celebrated as foon as we should meet ; so that I hope to find at Hamburgh those three Perfons whom Love, Esteem, and Nature, oblige me a to Honour and Cherish.

Thus

RC

tha

2 |

dar

us :

He

10

In

4 45

of Mac

cr

V.r.

first

Car

his whi

Broj

t'ia

oí

mo

the

Vo

to

tre

wh

of

alfo

Bei

thi

Thus, faid Madamoifelle de St. Phale, you have heard my History, which I may justly call Sad and Tragical; for, for the few Moments of Joy which I have had, I have felt a thousand Dolours, and shed tears without Number. In this very moment that I now speak to you, my Heare is divided between Hope and Fear, about the News that I shall hear at Hamburgh, so that you would pity me, could you but be sensible of it.

As foon as the had ended, every one of the Company gave her their thanks, and declared the fatistaction they had received in the relation of these Adventures, which surnished matter for a Conversation, concerning the divers Accidents we are in this Life exposed to. The two Hamburgh Ladies took occasion to Compliment Madamoiselle de St. Phale arresh, and to offer her their House; their Father in a very obliging manner did the same thing. The Danish Baron pray'd Madamoifelle de St. Phale that fince he was obliged to lay afide all the Hopes he might have conceived, the would allow him at least a part in her Friendship, to which she answered like one very well bred, and that was not unacquainted with the World.

Thus passed this day, and the Company brake up, each retiring to his Cabin, in hopes the next morning to see Hambargh. Twas about Nine a Clock in the Morning before we discovered this samous City, and about half an hour after Ten we entered the Port, where we landed; and whilst we were giving Order for the Carriage of our tradles, a Coach slopt near the place where we were;

d

7

.

3.

were; at first we took no great Notice of them that were in it, nor they of us, but the aftion of a Lacquey who came and threw himself at Madamoifelle de Sr. Phale's Feet much furprized us: Ah Joli-Bois, cryed the, Where's thy Mafter? He is, Madamoiselle, (said he) in youder Coach, to enquire at the Port whether you are come : Immediately he left us to go to his Mafter, which was indeed Montieur d'Ombreval, who came out of the Coach with Monticur de Haute-Cour, and Madamoiselle de Gariffolles; I never saw two loveer Gentlemen in my life, nor so beautiful a Virgin, except Madamoiselle de St. Phale. The fift that came up to us was Mountieur de Hantecar, who being impatient to fee the Object of his Vows, ran toward Madamoiselle de St. Phale, while Mounfieur d'Ombreval saluted Madam de Broffis. These Gentlemen highly Complemented us all for her take and Madamoifelle de St. Phale's. I should never have done, should I relate all that faid 'till there came Coaches for most of us, which carried us to one of the most famous Inns in Hambrough.

We were a good Company of us, and abode there some days to refresh our selves after our Voyage. The Merchant of Hambourgh invited us to go to an House of Pleasure which he had in the Countrey near the Elbe, where we were treated with unexpressible Magnificence for an whole day, with fome of the principal Ladies of Hambourgh who spake French: There were also some other excellent Persons for Worth and Beauty, fo that there was nothing wanting to make this Affembly perfect.

I must needs say, that the Power of Joy with Love is very wonderful. Madamoiselle de S: Phale is naturally gay, yet the had a certain Languor in her Eyes whilft the was separated from her Lover, which vanish'd as soon as ever the faw him. As for Madamoifelle de Gariffolies the was certainly a Virgin that as well deferved to be beloved as any in the World, in whom Wildom, Modesty and Piety, were accompanied with Spirit, Beauty, Nobility and Youth, which is indeed very rare. Our two Ladies of Hare borreb were as much taken with her as they had been with Madamoiselle de St. Phale. Mounsteul de Haute-Cour and Mounfieur d' Ombreval les their Miffresses for some Moments to Complemen those Ladies, which occasioned one of the please Entest Conversations in the World.

FINIS.

